

Rise of the Darkness

Author not credited

STORYPDF

Complete English text · US Letter reading edition

Contents

CHAPTER 1	6
CHAPTER 2	10
Chapter 3	15
CHAPTER 4	19
CHAPTER 5	23
CHAPTER 6	26
CHAPTER 7	29
CHAPTER 8	32
Chapter 9	35
CHAPTER 10	38
CHAPTER 11	42
CHAPTER 12	46
CHAPTER 13	50
chapter 14	53
chapter 15	57
CHAPTER 16	60
CHAPTER 17	64
CHAPTER 18	67
CHAPTER 19	71
CHAPTER 20	74
CHAPTER 21	77

CHAPTER 22	80
CHAPTER 23	83
CHAPTER 24	87
CHAPTER 25	91
chapter 26	95
chapter 27	99
CHAPTER 28	103
CHAPTER 29	106
CHAPTER 30	110
CHAPTER 31	114
CHAPTER 32	117
CHAPTER 33.	120
CHAPTER 34	124
CHAPTER 35	127
CHAPTER 36	130
CHAPTER 37	134
CHAPTER 38	137
CHAPTER 39	141
CHAPTER 40	145
CHAPTER 41	151
CHAPTER 42	156
CHAPTER 43	159
CHAPTER 44.	162

CHAPTER 45	165
CHAPTER 46	171
Chapter 47	176
CHAPTER 48	179
CHAPTER 49	182
CHAPTER 50	185
CHAPTER 51	190
CHAPTER 52	193

About this edition

This StoryPDF reading edition contains the complete English text, with its original paragraph and section order preserved.

Newly typeset with selectable text, a linked contents section and chapter bookmarks. Copyright rules can differ by country. Corrections and rights enquiries: liuxinglianxue@gmail.com.

Read online: [StoryPDF / Rise of the Darkness](#).

Reading edition: 2026-10-28. Typography: Crimson Text (SIL Open Font License).

CHAPTER 1

"Wake up Sophie, we have to go. Or you'll be late for the gala." Calla said to her niece.

"Yay!!! I'm going to buy a lot of stuff today. You promised." Sophie replied excitedly

"Of course honey. But first, you need to see your costume." Calla said with a grin.

"Costume?" Sophie asked in confusion.

"You really thought I'm going to take you to a fantasy gala in normal clothes. I bought you a princess gown. Here let me show you." Calla replied and unzipped the cover. She showed her niece a beautiful pink gown with sparkling crystal baby pumps. A loud gasp escaped Sophie's lips and her eyes shone like millions of stars in a night. Looking at her excited face, Calla asked her niece.

"Do you like it honey?" Calla asked.

"I love it, aunt Calla. Thank you so much." Sophie replied and clapped her hands.

"Then get up and get ready. We have breakfast and then we will leave." Calla said.

"Okay." Saying that Sophie went to the bathroom to do her morning business. Calla already filled the bathtub with warm water and Sophie's favorite Jasmine fragrance. Calla left the room and went back to the kitchen to get the breakfast ready. After she was done, she went back to Sophie's bathroom to help her bath. Calla wrapped a towel around Sophie and stepped out of the bathroom with Sophie in her arms. She helped Sophie to get ready, after that they went to the dinning table where Sophie was welcomed by the mouth watering aroma of cheese omelette and ginger bread. She requested her aunt to make these things for her and Calla never ignored Sophie's wishes. They sat together and Calla fed her niece with so much love. Finishing their breakfast, they got up, Calla locked the house and they went to their car. Calla made Sophie sit then they drove off.

After a 45 minutes drive, Calla parked her car and they went to the fantasy gala. Finally, Sophie was happy and that's all that matters for Calla. A month ago Sophie's parents and Calla's step sister and brother in law died in a car accident. Since then Calla was trying so hard to bring her niece back to her life. But it was hard to pull her out of the sorrows. The gala finally brought Sophie's smile back. Calla was happy too. Sophie was having a lot of fun, she played so many games and won so many prizes. Then she saw a cotton candy shop. Jumping in happiness she asked Calla. "Can we buy some cotton candy please. I promise I won't eat any candies for 3 days."

"It's okay baby. Today is your day. So you can have whatever you want and I won't stop you." Calla replied.

"Thank you aunt Calla." Sophie replied with a huge smile on her face. They made their way to the shop. The sale's man man looked at Sophie. He bowed his head.

"Oh your highness, I'm very lucky to finally see you." Sale's man said to Sophie.

"Thank you." Sophie replied shyly.

"What kind of service your highness want from me today? How can I serve my royal princess today?" Sale's man asked.

"Go ahead, tell him what do you want?" Calla encouraged Sophie.

"I would like to have that candy castle." Sophie replied and pointed her finger at the model Castle.

"Tell me your favorite colors your highness, I will make sure to surprise you with my skills." Sale's man asked.

"Blue, purple and pink." Sophie replied.

"Give me 3 minutes your highness and I will give you the most beautiful castle in the world." Sale's man said. After 3 minutes sale's man gave cotton candy castle to Sophie with a bow. Sophie gasped and spoke.

"This is the most beautiful castle I've ever seen. It's so pretty." Sophie said.

"I'm glad you like it your highness." Sale's man replied. Calla gave money to Sophie and she gave it to the sale's man.

"I liked your service and I am granting you this money as a reward." Sophie said as a real princess.

"Thank you, your highness. I'm really grateful to you." Sale's man replied and again bowed his head. Saying that Calla and Sophie left the shop. They walked for a while until Sophie's eyes caught the sight of a shop. She paused in her way and kept staring at the shop. Calla noticed that.

"What is it Sophie?" Calla asked. Sophie didn't speak but rose her index finger in the direction of the shop she was staring. Calla looked at the shop and asked her niece.

"What? You want to go to that shop?" Calla asked. She just nodded her head. Calla didn't ask her anything else. She grabbed her hand and they walked towards the shop. Sometimes, Sophie acted this way. Calla never knew why? She even tried to ask Mara, her step sister, but every time she asked her, Mara either brushed it off or changed the topic. Then Calla got habitual of this weird reaction of her niece and never asked about it. They both stepped in the shop. It was filled with many beautiful things. Some things were weird but some were very beautiful. Sophie was going through everything, but carefully, she didn't want to break anything but wanted to buy something from this shop. Calla let her choose whatever she wanted to buy and she looked around. Calla felt

someone staring at her. She looked around and found a man staring at her. He looked familiar to her. She kept looking at him, then she remembered where and when she had seen him before.

Flash Back. (6 months ago)

Calla was at a Halloween party held by her school friends on the beach. It was fun, she was having a great time. She saw her friend, Henry Quinn came to her with chocolates and sat besides her.

"It's been so long. How are you? How are things at work?" Henry asked.

"I'm fine thank you. As for my work, it's growing bigger day by day, year after year. I must say, Sidney's social contacts and professional skills make it grow up and bigger. We are one of the biggest publishing companies in America. We're now in the top 10 best companies." Calla replied.

" Good to hear that. It was your dream. You finally made it come true." Henry said.

" It wasn't just me. If it isn't for Sidney I wouldn't be here." Calla replied honestly.

" Give yourself some credit for all the hard work you do. She just sits in her air-conditioned office and passes orders." Henry said.

"That's not true. She has done a lot of hard work to make it to the top." Calla replied with a smile.

"Whatever you say. Anyways, do you have someone special in your life?" Henry asked.

"If I would've had any one special in my life, I would be sitting with him, holding hands." Calla replied and chuckled.

" Oh that's so true." Henry said. They both got up and walked a little bit on the beach, remembering all the time they had spent in school. Calla looked at the shining moon and admired the scenery in front of her. When she looked back on Henry he was down on one knee with a ring box in his hands. Every one stopped and looked at Henry and Calla. DJ played a slow romantic track and Henry gave him a nod.

" I don't know how to do it magically but Calla, I've been into you since I first saw you in school. You're stunning, smart and very talented. Will you accept my love and marry me after a few years when we both will be settled?" Henry proposed Calla. Calla nodded her head and the crowd went crazy. Henry slipped the ring in her finger and they hugged each other. Calla had a crush on him since school but she never told him that. Because she never wanted to ruin her friendship with him. But he actually proposed to her and for her, it was a dream come true. Henry broke the hug and went to bring her some wine. She wrapped her arms around her chest and inhaled salty air of the beach. Suddenly she bumped into someone. She turned around and looked at the man she bumped into.

"I'm so sorry I didn't see you. I'm really very sorry." Calla apologized.

"Don't marry him. He loves your position and your money but not your emotions and your family." Strange man.

"Excuse me? What do you mean with all that and you the hell are you?" Calla asked angrily.

"The time will tell you and teach you everything about your future soon." The strange man said that and he pointed his finger at Henry. Calla turned around to look at Henry who had two wine glasses in his hands and he was walking back to Calla. She turned back to the man who was speaking with her but he wasn't there. She tried to look around for him but he was nowhere to be found. "Who was he? Where did he go? What did he mean by Henry doesn't love me but my money?" Calla thought. She went to more people and asked about him. Calla was a sketch artist, it was easy for her to describe someone's face. She asked almost everyone but none of them knew who that guy was, where he came from or where he went? Calla was curious but she brushed off the thoughts and went back to the party and enjoyed her night. But she never forgot his face.

CHAPTER 2

Back in Time.

Calla remembered the stranger. He was the same person who met her 6 months ago. She had been searching him since then, but never found a single clue about him. And here he was standing, he hadn't changed a bit. She came back to her senses when she found him staring at her. She tapped on Sophie's shoulder who was still busy looking at things and admiring them.

"Don't go anywhere, I'll be back in a minute." Calla said to her niece.

"Go talk to your price, he's cute." Sophie said with a grin.

"Henry's not here Sophie." Calla replied in an annoyed tone.

"I'm not talking about Henry, he's not your Prince." Sophie replied and giggled. Calla shook her head and went to that strange man who was still drooling over her. To her surprise, she wasn't even uncomfortable with him staring at her. She stood right in front of him and glared at her.

"Who are you?" Calla asked him and tried to keep her voice firm.

"Really, that's the best question you could come up with?" The strange man asked with a chuckle.

"Pardon please?" Calla asked with a raised brow.

"What's in your heart Miss Calla Davis." The strange man asked.

"How do you know my name? Are you stalking me?" Calla asked.

"I'm not a cheap stalker, I'm a guardian." The strange man replied with anger.

"What? What do you mean with that? Guardian for whom?" Calla asked in confusion.

"The time will tell you and teach you everything about your future soon." The strange man said and raised his finger but this time, he pointed at Sophie. Calla looked at her niece who had so many pendants in her hands.

"Beware the darkness that soon will rise." He whispered in Calla's ear as Calla looked back at him but he was again gone. Calla was now confused with the hide and seek game he was playing. Calla didn't waste her time to look for him, she went back to her niece. Sophie made her choose one of the pendants. All of them were so beautiful but one of them caught her eyes. It was a blue crystal pendant with silver sparklings inside. Sophie gave it to the shopkeeper and asked her to pack it into a cute box. They paid for the pendant and went out. They did more shopping. Sophie sat on one of the ponies like a princess. So far the day was good and it made Sophie so much happier than

Calla had imagined. It was almost dusk when they went back to their house. Sophie happily took all the shopping bags from her aunt. They opened the door and Henry greeted her from behind.

"Hey." Henry said.

"Hi. What are you doing here?" Calla asked.

"Just came to see you." Henry said.

"Hi Henry." Sophie greeted him.

"Oh hi. What are you doing? Can we go for dinner tonight?" Henry replied carelessly then asked Calla. Calla gave him a deadly glare.

"Baby take all this to your room. We'll check everything, I'll be there in a bit." Calla said.

"Okay aunt Calla. Bye Henry." Sophie replied and went to her room.

"What the hell is wrong with you? I've already told you about a hundred times that I can't go to have dinner with you. I can't leave her alone." Calla asked angrily.

"Who's asking you to leave her alone. I've told you to get a nanny for her." Henry replied.

"And I've told you that I can take care of her by myself." Calla replied.

"How will we be able to work like this? How will it work in future? If she won't learn to live with nannies or alone." Henry asked.

"Wait, what do you mean with living alone or with nannies?" Calla asked in confusion.

"You're not planning to adopt her." Henry asked and chuckled. Hearing the word adopt, Calla's anger rose and she could not hold it back.

"Adopt, what are you even thinking? Henry, For the love of God, she's my niece." She yelled at Henry.

"Her mother was your step sister, not your real sis...." Henry was replying but Calla didn't let him complete his sentence.

"That's enough. If it wasn't for her, I wouldn't be even here. You've said that once, but make sure that ain't happened again or I swear to God I won't think once for choosing her over you." Calla firmly said.

"That's what you're going to do now. You wanna babysit her your whole life. Then what about your work? It's growing bigger. Look at you. You're comparing me with that little witch...." Henry could not complete his sentence because a sharp slap made its way to his cheek. Calla slapped him hard enough that it left a mark on his cheek.

"You're sick. You dare to call her names? She's not my niece but my daughter, my family and my life. That strange man was right about you. You don't love me but my money and success. It was actually a mistake. I should have known better. A sick person like you can crave for money and fame only. GET OUT AND NEVER SHOW ME YOUR FACE EVER AGAIN." Calla yelled at him and threw his ring on his face and he left. She felt so angry.

"How dare anyone think of my Sophie like that? She's my life and I can give up on anything for her happiness." Calla thought.

She splashed some cold water on her face, then went to Sophie's room who hadn't heard a single word. She was happily going through all the stuff she bought. Calla sat on the couch and was in her deep thoughts. She was pulled out of her thoughts when Sophie started singing her a song.

Sophie: Happy birthday to you,

Happy birthday to you.

Happy birthday dear aunt Calla,

Happy birthday to you.

She gave her the box with the pendant she bought from the gala.

"Thank you baby, you remembered?" Calla asked

"How can I forget your birthday. You're my best friend and I love you." Sophie replied.

"I love you too baby and you're my best friend too." Calla said. They hugged each other, then Sophie went back to unpack all the things she bought, where Calla opened the box and looked at the beautiful pendant. Suddenly she remembered the man again who told her about Henry. Her heartbeat rose as she looked at her happy niece who was busy in shopping bags.

"I need to find him and ask him what he meant about beware the darkness and why he pointed to Sophie?" She thought.

Calla went back to the kitchen and cooked dinner for her niece. She was humming the lullaby Xavier, her step brother in law wrote for her. He used to sing it for her. Calla wasn't even born when her father died. Her mother took care of her and Mara. Calla was 5 and Mara was 16 when Calla's mother Sophie was diagnosed with stomach cancer. She loved Mara more than her own daughter, she didn't want to leave her like this. She set her up with Xavier Luke. He was a great man. After Sophie's death he took Calla in as well. He raised her like his own daughter and they both decided not to plan their family until Calla turned 18. Mara got a baby a year later. Calla was 19 years old by then. Mara named her daughter after her step mother who loved her like her own. The time when Mara was in labour, she got some complications and doctors asked Xavier to make

a choice. He chose his wife. When Calla came to know about it she went to her sister, put her hand on her sister's baby bum.

" Hey little baby. Please don't leave me. I've been waiting for you for so long. I promise you I will take care of you and make all your wishes come true. Just come to me, don't leave me. I want to see you, hold you, cherish you, love you and give you everything you will ask." Calla said sobbing hard

Xavier held her hand and took her out of the labour room. They waited and Calla kept praying for both Mara and her baby. A baby cry made its way to Xavier's ears and he looked at Calla. Nurse came out with a beautiful baby in her arms.

"Congratulations Mr Luke. It's a girl and your wife named her Sophie." Nurse said.

Calla quickly stood up and looked at the baby who was now asleep. She was so beautiful like a flower.

" And how is my wife?" Xavier asked.

" Your wife is perfectly fine and so is the baby. Mother and baby both are fine and out of danger." Nurse replied.

" Can I see her?" Xavier asked.

"Yes she's asking for you." Nurse replied.

Nurse left and Xavier gave the baby to Calla. She first hesitated but then carefully took the baby in her arms. Xavier left to see his wife while Calla kissed the baby's forehead and said thank you.

After the dinner, Sophie went to Calla's room instead of her parents room. After her parents death she asked Calla to make it her room. Calla did as Sophie asked but she never left her alone. But tonight she wanted to sleep with her aunt again. Calla requested Xavier to set her room as Sophie's room. Since Sophie was born, she has lived in Calla's room. Calla took care of the baby, even though she took care of her at night. Mara tried to take Sophie to her room for nights but Calla never let her. She loved the baby so much. Calla helped Sophie to change into a comfy night clothes. She also changed into silky nighty and laid besides her niece. Sophie hugged Calla and Calla sung her the lullaby Xavier used to sing for her.

Uncle sun has gone to sleep,

It is dark outside.

But baby you don't need to fear,

Daddy will always be by your side.

For the birds those sings,

And the stars that shine,
You are the only princess, my sunshine.
No monsters under the bed,
Daddy will always check.
No bed bugs will ever bite,
My princess will always sleep tight.
For the rain that falls,
For the fairies those fight,
You are the only princess, my moon pie.
Your smile make the flowers bloom,
Your eyes sparkle like glittery night.
Your heart is bigger than the ocean blue,
Your shining hair makes the world bright.
For the roads ahead , difficult to easy,
We will always together fight.
Daddy will love his princess Sophie,
The love of his life.

Soon Sophie was in her Wonderland and Calla kept on thinking about the strange man she met twice. She didn't know him at all but it still felt like she had known him for decades. He was drooling over her but she didn't feel uncomfortable. He whispered in her ear. She could still feel his hot breaths on her ear. She felt butterflies in her stomach as her cheeks burned by only thinking of how close he was when he whispered in her ear.

"Who is he? How did he know about Henry? Why did he point his finger at Sophie this time? What did he mean by he's a guardian?" Thinking about all those questions, Calla also closed her eyes and drifted off.

Chapter 3

"Beware the darkness that soon will rise." Calla heard his voice again. The strange man.

"Daddy...." Baby Calla called Xavier.

"The time will tell you and teach you everything about your future soon." She heard the strange man again.

"Daddy where are you?" Baby Calla again called Xavier.

Calla was looking around for Xavier, she never had seen her father, but Xavier fulfilled that part in her life. She has called him daddy since the beginning. She remembered that time, she was 6 and they were playing hide and seek. She looked everywhere but didn't find him. She called his name again in fear but no response. She sat down at the corner of the room, hugged her knees and sobbed hard. She was calling her daddy between her sobs and hiccups. But he didn't reply. Suddenly the door opened and she covered her face with her palms. The boots stopped somewhere in front of her and there was a thump as whoever it was settled down, their breath warming her hands. Whoever it was grabbed her wrists and his hands were massive, they made her shiver in fear.

They removed her palms from her face. She shut her eyes tightly, a loud sob escaped her lips when that huge figure held both of her wrists in one hand and with the second they pinched her chin softly. She didn't open her eyes, not until they kissed her lips lovingly. She opened her eyes and looked at the strange man sitting. A smirk plastered on his lips he again came close to her and kissed her, this time she kissed him back. He licked her lower lip, asking for entrance. She didn't protest. Parting her lips, she let him in. His tongue slid into her mouth, tasting every single corner of her mouth. She was almost out of breath when he released her. Breathing heavily, she looked at her reflection on the shining marble floor. She wasn't a baby anymore. She was back in her old age.

He held both of her wrists above her head and leaned down until his lips reached to the nape of her neck. He bit her weak spot lightly and she moaned out loud. He kept kissing and nibbling her neck until she gave up and stopped resisting him. He let go of her wrists and pulled her in his lap. He trailed wet kisses from her jawline and ended up at her chest. She was holding his shoulders tightly. In a flash he stripped off her shirt. She closed her eyes as he reached to her pulse, but instead of kissing he spoke, in a deep voice. "Beware the darkness that soon will rise."

As he said it, darkness enveloped her again and then she was standing on a highway. She looked here and there then the reality hit her hard. She was at the same highway where her daddy and her step sister died in a car accident. She clapped both of her hands on her mouth to block her sobs. It

was the most horrible night of her life. She lost her family that night. She was sleeping in her bedroom with Sophie when her phone rang in the middle of the night. She got up and went out of her room, she didn't want to disturb her niece in her sleep. Sidney was in the guest room as her apartment was under the renovations. She picked up the call and spoke in her half sleepy voice.

"Hello." Calla greeted.

"Are you Miss Calla Davis?" She heard a woman's voice.

"Yes, who is this?" Calla asked.

"I'm officer Kelly Miss Davis. You have to come to the highway. I'm sending you the location." An officer replied.

"Wait why? What's wrong?" Calla asked in confusion.

"I'm sorry Miss Davis. But Mr and Mrs Luke are no more." Officer Kelly replied.

"What?" Calla yelled out loud that Sidney heard it too and quickly went out of the room.

"Their car caught in an accident. I'm sorry Miss Davis but they are not alive anymore." Officer Kelly replied.

Calla fell on the floor, tears rolling down on her cheeks. Sidney asked her and she could only get herself to say a few words. "Daddy and Mara are gone."

She burst into tears and sobs. Thank God, Sidney's driver was there too. She told her driver to take Calla to the location, was sent to her by officer Kelly. He nodded and took her there as fast as he could. An hour later they were on the highway. Officer Kelly came to Calla and gave her a piece of paper, something was written on it. Tears pooled out of her eyes when she realized that Mara used her blood to write her that letter. She opened it and read it.

"I'm sorry Calla. I don't think so we can survive this, but we will always be watching you, like a guardian. Promise me, you'll take care of Sophie and will raise her like your own child. Promise me that you will protect her and look after her like me and daddy did to you. And keep one thing I'm your mind, you'll always be my older daughter.

Love you Mara."

Calla held that letter to her chest, knelt on the ground and cried. She felt hot breaths on the back of her neck. Someone grabbed both of her shoulders and stilled her movements. Then again she heard that same whisper.

"Beware the darkness that soon will rise." She heard him again and with a loud gasp she woke up on her bed. Sophie was still sleeping. She sighed in relief that it was just a nightmare. She looked

down and found herself naked in bed. She looked around and found her nighty was on the ground. She looked around but everything was in its place. She scratched her head in confusion, then got up and wore her nighty back. She stepped into the shower, washed her body then got out. She wore her skinny jeans and t-shirt and paired them up with boots and went downstairs to prepare breakfast. She went back to her room. Sophie was already awake. She helped Sophie in the bath. Then she made Sophie wear a cute pink knee length puffy dress and they went downstairs to have their breakfast. After breakfast, she dropped Sophie to her school and came to work. She entered her office and sat on her chair. Suddenly, the door burst open and Sidney barged in. She had an angry face and she looked pissed. She asked Calla in a loud angry voice. "What happened yesterday? And why in hell you didn't call me?"

"Good morning to you too Sidney." Calla replied in an annoyed tone.

Sidney sat on the front chair. "I'm serious, tell me what happened?" She asked in a worried tone. Seeing her worried face, Calla gave her a smile.

"Nothing happened. Whatever happened, should have happened long ago. I was noticing his behavior with Sophie. I can't stand anyone pitying her or call her names." Calla replied.

Hearing her response, Sidney leaned back on the chair and thought for a moment. "Are you alright?" She asked and Calla nodded her head.

"To be honest, I'm feeling like I'm free, after a long long time. I can do whatever I want and there is no one here to stop me." Calla replied with a satisfied smile.

"Well then happy Independence day to you. Now back to work." Sidney replied with a giggle.

She stayed in Calla's office for a good long hour. They discussed their weekly plans and talked about the problems and everything. After an hour, Sidney left for a business meeting and Calla was left alone in her room. She busied herself in her work. In an hour or so she was done with her work. She sighed in relief, leaned back to her chair and closed her eyes. All the scenes of her hot dream came back to her mind. She didn't understand why she was acting like this. It was just a dream.

Her hot thoughts were interrupted by a phone call. Annoyed with the sudden interruption she picked up the phone and yelled at whoever had disturbed her. "What?" Calla yelled.

"Miss Davis, it's me Annie. I'm sorry to bother you but Sophie isn't in the school." She heard a woman's voice from the other side of the line. Fear gripped her and her mouth went dry.

She swallowed a lump that formed in her throat. "What do you mean by she's not in the school? I dropped her myself like every day." Calla asked.

There was a moment of silence on the other side. "I'm not sure what happened? She went to the toilet but didn't come back." Annie replied.

A loud gasp escaped Calla's mouth. "I'm on my way to school." Calla replied and hung up with that, picked up her mobile and car keys and ran to Sidney's office.

She barged into Sidney's office. "Sophie's missing, I need to go to school right now." Calla said.

"Take my car and driver. I don't want you to end up in the hospital." Sidney said. Calla nodded and ran out of the building. The driver was ready and waiting for Calla. As she came out he held the door open for her. She sat in and they drove off. All her way to school, Calla was praying that it all would be a prank and Sophie would be in her classroom.

CHAPTER 4

The driver stopped the car at the main entrance of the school and Calla ran towards Sophie's classroom. She heard some yelling. Principal Ellen was yelling at all the teachers. Calla entered the classroom and spoke, breathing heavily. "Where is Sophie?"

Principal Ellen gave her a worried look. But she also had to save her school's reputation. She replied to Calla. "Miss Davis you can't be here, you know the school rules."

Calla anger rose and she spoke in a low but angry voice. "To hell with your school rules. My niece is missing and you're telling me your stupid rules." Principal shut her mouth knowing exactly what Calla is capable of.

Calla asked her question again. "Now Where is Sophie?"

Principal gave her a guilty look but Sophie's teacher Mandy, she shrugged her shoulders like it's not a big deal and spoke. "She's missing, she's not here." Before Calla could murder her, principal came between them and spoke again.

"She never left the school. I've checked the security footage. She must be here around. We need to find her."

Calla ran her hand through her hair and spoke again. "Okay I need to search the school. I know where she could be." Fear gripped principal Ellen and she shook her head.

"I can't allow you that. We'll check the school, you can sit in my office." Hearing that, Calla fumed up even more.

She looked at the principal with threatening eyes and spoke. "You have to be grateful to me that I didn't call the cops by now. I left my niece here and this is your school's security that my niece is nowhere to be found. I want to search the school, if not then I'll call Captain Helena, who's a really good friend of mine." Principal shut her mouth and just nodded her head.

Calla took a deep breath and started looking for her niece. She looked in every class, she checked every desk by herself but Sophie was nowhere. She asked the principal. "What happened before she disappeared?"

Principal stood in front of her and spoke. " She went to the toilet with one of the maids, but never returned."

Calla quickly asked back. "Where is the maid?" Principal narrowed her eyes and spoke.

"She is also missing. Her things are still here, that means she didn't leave the school either." The first thing that came to Calla's mind was, it must be the maid. She is the one behind it.

Calla spoke again. "Have you checked the toilet?" She said it while running in the toilet's direction.

Principal followed her and spoke. "A teacher checked it. It's empty." Calla didn't believe it just yet. She went to the toilet and checked every single door. She opened the last door and horror gripped her and the principal. The maid was lying on the ground. She had wounds and scratches all over her body, she must have fought someone. Calla checked her pulse, she was dead.

Calla turned around to look at the principal and asked her angrily. "I thought you said one of the teachers checked it, then what is this?" Principal was now angry and called Mandy. She was the one who was sent to check the toilet.

Mandy came in with a bitchy smile on her face. She stood in front of the principal and the principal asked in a low tone. "You said you checked the toilet and it was empty."

Mandy shrugged her shoulders carelessly and spoke. "Yeah." Principal anger rose as she grabbed Mandy's hand and took her to the dead body and angrily asked her. "Then what is this?" Mandy's face changed its colors. She was all pale now. She gulped in fear.

Calla fished her phone out and dialed Helena's number, she picked up on the second bell. "Hello."

Calla spoke. "Hi Helena, you have to come to the TriStar school. Sophie is missing and there is a dead body here."

Helena didn't speak much, she replied in a low voice. "I'm on my way."

Mandy angrily asked the principal. "How could you allow cops? It's against the school rules."

Principal replied to her in a disappointed tone. "There is a student missing and a dead body. I can't believe your carelessness could be that dangerous to the others. I'm sorry Mandy, I can't help you with that." Mandy looked at the door and tried to run away but Calla was faster. She caught her before she could leave and punched her hard so that she fell on the ground.

30 minutes later, Helena came with cops and an ambulance. Helena was Calla's school friend. They took the body for the postmortem and Mandy was cuffed. Helena came to Calla and spoke in a tired voice. "Don't worry Calla. I promise you, I'll do everything to bring Sophie back safely."

Calla nodded her head but she noticed Helena was looking tired. She asked her. "What's wrong with you? You look exhausted."

Helena took a deep breath and spoke again. "Since morning, this is the 15th case. All the same, the only thing different here is that there is a dead body. It's not a coincidence." Fear gripped Calla as she heard this.

Helena hugged Calla and said. "Don't worry, I will find her. I promise."

TWO WEEKS LATER.

Calla was sitting in her room, holding the pendant Sophie had gifted her. Since then she hasn't taken it off. It had been two weeks, but cops had no clue what actually happened to all the people. There were more cases registered about people's disappearance. Cops tried so hard to know the reason behind all these disappearances but there were no clues left behind. Maid's postmortem report came, Helena told her that she must have fought a lot to save Sophie. Calla felt guilty to even think that she was behind Sophie's disappearance. Helena asked Calla if she thought of someone who can do it. The first name that came in her mind was Henry, after all she broke up with him because of his behavior with Sophie. Police arrested him and questioned him but he had no clue. Helena checked his history. After Calla broke up with him, he took the first flight out of New York. As he came back, police arrested him. Calla was losing hope. Sidney didn't leave her best friend alone in this hard time. A loud sob escaped Calla's mouth and Sidney came into her room. Sidney didn't speak a single word, she just sat with Calla and hugged her. Calla sobbed hard and Sidney rubbed her back. Calla laid down on the bed, Sidney tugged the comforter over her body, turned off the lights and left the room. Soon Calla fell asleep.

Calla..., Calla... She heard someone was calling her. She tried to look around, but it was dark and couldn't see a thing. In a fearful voice she called. "Hello, is anyone here?"

But no one responded. She started walking, but the darkness blinded her. She called out again but this time a little louder. "Hello, can anyone hear me?"

Still nothing, silence was scaring her. Then she heard loud thumps coming her way slowly. It was a horse. She could tell that as she learned horse riding. The sound was getting clearer and louder, the horse was close. Suddenly, someone grabbed her arm and pushed her to the wall, carefully not to hurt her, then they wrapped their arms around her protectively. Thumps got louder and she could tell that it wasn't one horse anymore. Sky shone with a thunderstruck and she looked at the horse riders. She saw weird people in the dark capes, riding horses. She looked at the person who saved her. It was him, the strange man. He looked straight in her eyes. There was something about him. It never bothered her to be around him. He was holding her tightly and protectively, like he was keeping her safe from someone, hiding her from someone who would harm her.

Soon those riders were gone and she was left alone with him. He kissed the top of her head and spoke. "Beware the darkness that soon will rise."

She got pissed, angrily she asked him. "What does that suppose to mean? Why don't you just tell me what you want?"

He smiled at her and spoke again. "The time will tell you and teach you everything about your future soon."

Now he was getting upon her nerves. That's all he says, she can't understand a single word.

She yelled at him. "What do you mean?" He didn't say anything for a minute then he replied.

"Beware the darkness that soon will rise." With that he was gone in a flash. She initially cursed him. She looked around, she was all alone in a forest.

She screamed on the top of her lungs. "WHAT DO YOU MEAN?" She stood still and looked at the sky, it wasn't night but it was dark. Someone tapped her shoulder, she turned around and found Xavier standing. She had so many things to tell him but all she was able to say was. "Daddy."

CHAPTER 5

Calla turned around to see Xavier was standing, she knelt on the ground and started sobbing hard. Xavier also knelt, cupped her face and spoke. "What is it Calla?"

Calla looked in his eyes and spoke, "I've failed you, I've failed you both. You both trusted me with Sophie and I wasn't able to protect her."

Xavier gave her a small smile, he wiped her tears and spoke again in a calm tone. "You've done more than you could. But this isn't something you can handle that easily. You need help Calla."

Calla gave him a confused look and spoke. "The cops are trying but..."

Before she could finish Xavier cut her in the middle and spoke again. "Cops can't find her, they can't help. There is someone who can help you find Sophie and the others. And you're the only one who can convince him to do that." Calla grabbed his hands tightly and asked him.

"Who daddy? Just tell me. I will do everything to bring her back." Xavier's face was a bit serious when he started speaking again.

"His name is Ethan, Ethan Carter. You know him and you're the only one who can reach him. Find him and ask him to find and save Sophie."

Calla was more confused, she was sure she never heard this name in her life, she asked Xavier. "I don't think so, I've heard this name ever before."

Xavier shook his head and spoke. "No you haven't but it's the same guy who you have known as the strange man. Calla keep the name in your mind, Ethan Carter. You have to find him, he's the only one who can help you. You have time till the dark sun will rise. I know you can do it." He pecked her forehead and left.

Calla slowly opened her eyes and looked out of the window. It was almost dawn. Her mind reminded her of the name again. "Ethan Carter." She heard it like a whisper. She quickly got up and went to her study desk. She grabbed a pen and paper and quickly wrote his name on it. She put it in her purse and went to the bathroom to take a shower. She came out of the shower after 10 minutes, changed in black buttoned up shirt and blue skinny jeans. She wore her shoes and went downstairs. Sidney was already there, making breakfast. Sidney thought Calla wouldn't work, she would take a day off.

But here she is, ready to go to work. Sidney asked her and Calla replied. "No I can't come to work today, I have to find someone. I'll work at home." Sidney gave her an understanding nod. Calla

didn't eat anything, she quickly grabbed her keys and her mobile, and went out. She sat in her car and drove off.

She didn't know where and how to find him. But she decided to start looking for him, where she had last seen him. She parked her car and went into the fantasy festival. She found that shop quickly. Calla was a sketch artist as well. 2 weeks ago when she saw him last, she drew his face on paper, she didn't know that it would help her like this. She showed people his sketch, no one knew who he was. She didn't give up, she knew Xavier would never misguide her. She kept looking for him. She hasn't had anything since morning and it was way past dusk. She wasn't feeling fine, her head and feet were hurting, She felt dizzy. She lost control and was about to hit the ground when a strong arm grabbed her small figure tightly and made her stand again. She looked at the stranger, it was him. It was Ethan. She smiled and said, "Finally, I have found you." With that she closed her eyes and darkness enveloped her.

Calla opened her eyes in a total different place. Her eyes roamed around but she had no clue where she was. She was lying on a soft blue silk bed, it was huge. She looked around, the room was all clean and clear. She tried to get up but fell back down due to the dizziness. The door of the room opened and Ethan came in. He had a tray full of food and a glass of juice. He came and sat on the edge of the bed. He placed the tray besides her and asked her in a worried tone. "How are you feeling now?"

She looked at him and spoke in a weak voice. "Dizzy, my head hurts." He nodded his head and made her sit on the bed. He gave her the tray but she refused to eat and spoke to him. "I need your help."

He shushed her, he held a spoon full of fried veggies and chicken close to her mouth and spoke. "You eat first, then we will talk." The food smelled good, her stomach was growling due to hunger. She gave up and started eating, he fed her by his hands.

When she was done he took the tray and was about to get up to leave but she stopped him. "I thought you said I'll eat then you'll listen."

He sighed and looked at her. "I already know why you are here and what do you want from me?" She was shocked listening to him. She was sure Xavier told her everything in her dream.

He read the expressions of her face and answered her unasked question. "I know everything about you. What do you think, what do you do, what do you want? I even know every single dream you've had in your entire life." She found it really strange, after hearing all this, she would have feared him but instead she felt safe here, around him. She brushed off her thoughts and asked him.

"What do you mean?" He put the tray aside and sat beside her.

He looked in her eyes and spoke. "I know you've met Xavier last night, he told you my name and told you to find me. You have found me but I can't help you with Sophie's disappearance." Saying that he exited the room. She slowly got up and followed him. Calla placed her hand on the wall to balance herself. Her head was still spinning and she felt weak. She was walking, she got on the stairs and started climbing down. She was almost at the ground floor when she missed a step and fell down. Ethan again caught her before she would get hurt. He scooped her up in his arms and made her sit on the couch. He went to the kitchen and brought her a glass of water. She drank it all in one go.

He placed the glass on the table and again repeated himself. "I can't help you with this. I'm sorry." Tears started to roll down on her cheeks. She was crying. He could bare anything in this world but her tears.

He rose both of his hands in the air and told her. "Alright fine. I'll help you. Now stop crying." He said it as he wiped her face with his palms.

He spoke again. "My master was right, you women are manipulative."

Calla's face lightened up and she wrapped her arms around his neck and spoke. "Thank you so much, you have no idea how happy I am."

He smiled, rubbed her back soothingly and spoke. "I can feel everything that you feel. As I said, I even know every dream or nightmare you've ever had in your entire life."

Her eyes widened as she quickly pulled away from him and with narrowed eyes she asked him. "Every dream?" Her heartbeat was fast and cheeks were red.

He chuckled and leaned close to her and spoke again in a low seductive voice. "All of them." He got up and scooped her up again, he took her back to his room, laid her down and pulled the silky comforter over her body. He sat beside her, holding her hands until she drifted off.

CHAPTER 6

Calla woke up next morning, alone in that room. Her phone was buzzing on the nightstand. She picked it up and said in a sleepy tone. "Hello."

Sidney yelled from the other side of the line. "Where the hell are you? Do you have any idea how worried I am?"

Calla rolled her eyes on that and replied in an annoyed tone. "Good morning to you too."

Hearing her annoyed reply Sidney fumed up more and said. "I'm asking you where are you?"

Calla sat up and spoke. "I'm fine, I will be working from home. Please try to understand..."

She wasn't able to complete her sentence, Sidney cut her in the middle. "You think I care about work right now. I know you are worried about Sophie. Did you find anything?"

Calla didn't want to lie to her best friend but she knew she can't tell Sidney anything about Ethan. So she decided to keep it to herself. "I haven't found anything now, but I will. Bye." Saying that she quickly cut the call. She looked around and found a ladies knee length green dress on the sofa. She quickly got up and looked at the dress.

She ran her fingers on the dress when Ethan cleared his throat and spoke. "It's not to just admire. Go and get fresh. I'll make something for you to eat." She narrowed her eyes, took the dress and went to the bathroom. She took a quick shower and changed into that dress. She didn't bother to dry her hair and went downstairs.

Her stomach growled loudly and she looked at Ethan with an embarrassed expression. Ethan didn't say anything, he made her sit and serve her eggs and toast. She ate without even looking around. She was hungry. When she finished, Ethan took her plate and asked her. "How much do you know about these things?"

Calla gave him a blank look and he understood that she knew nothing. He took a deep breath and spoke again. "If we are doing this, then we are going to do this my way. I will be the one to decide what to do and when. You will just follow my lead." Calla knew if she tried to fight him with this he would back away and she could not afford it. She knew he was the only one who could help her, so she just nodded.

He again spoke. "I also have to tell you and teach you things about our kind."

She scratched her head and spoke. "Your kind?"

He looked straight in her eyes and said. "Yes my kind. There are creatures living in this world that you know nothing about."

She couldn't help but laugh. She thought he was trying to scare her. She laughed so hard and spoke. "If you think you can scare me away by telling me some stupid Dracula stories then you are wrong Mr."

He shook his head and spoke again in an angry tone. "Do you even know what kind of creature your sister was?" Her eyes widened in shock, as long as she knew, Mara was a human just like her. Seeing her shocked face, Ethan understood that she knew nothing about her family, she had no idea what she's getting herself into.

Ethan took her hand and they both moved to his living room. He made her sit on the couch and he sat on the ground. He took her hand in his, looked straight in her eyes and spoke again in a low tone so Calla wouldn't get scared. "Your step sister and her husband, they both were vampires. I know you know nothing about these things but this is the truth. They both hid it from you for a reason." Calla didn't say anything, she just listened to him whatever he was saying with wide eyes.

Seeing her silence, he kept going. " You are a human, maybe that was the reason they hid it from you. This isn't going to be easy for you. I have to teach you everything as soon as possible." She kept looking in his eyes for any kind of hint of joke or humor but nothing, she found nothing. He was dead serious.

She had so many questions in her mind but all she could ask was. "Do you know where Sophie is?" He stood up and sat beside her.

He looked in her eyes again and spoke. "Yes, and she's fine."

She quickly asked him back, "How do you know that's she's fine?"

He cupped her face and spoke again. "Whoever has taken her, is going to take care of her more than you ever have. They must be giving her everything she will ask for. For them, she's a queen." Hearing him, she took a sigh of relief knowing that her niece is fine. Now the only question in her mind was who took her? She wanted to ask him, but she knew he wouldn't tell her.

Still stubbornly she asked him. "Who took her?"

He chuckled and replied. "It's enough information for today. I will tell you the rest later." He knew she was about to ask him more. He placed his index finger on her lips, shushed her.

He came close to her and spoke again, more like whispered. "We don't want you to be crazy, do we?" He ended his sentence with a wink and Calla's cheeks turned pink. She found it very weird, he just winked at her then why is she blushing, she thought.

As if he just read her mind and spoke to her getting even closer. "Maybe, it's because of the dirty dreams of yours." Her eyes widened in shock, she was shocked for two things. One, that he answered her unasked question and two he was talking about the dreams she has been having since she saw him last.

Shock was visible on her face and he answered her unasked question. "I can read minds, that's how I know what you are thinking also, I have the same dreams as you." Hearing him, she blushed even more. She knew what kind of dreams she was having about him and he knows about them. She narrowed her eyes in embarrassment. Her nose turned pink too.

He pinched her chin softly and guided her gaze towards him. She looked in his eyes which were shining like stars. He looked at her lips then back in her eyes. She closed her eyes as he came even closer to her. She shivered when she felt his hot breaths on her ear. Her breaths became heavy and her heart was jumping in her ribcage. He chuckled and spoke, "Soon but not now." With that he got up and left her in the living room alone. She inhaled deeply, inhaling his scent in the process. She liked the way he treated her, gently. Stayed there for a while, tried hard to control her heart beat which was still beating erratically in her chest.

He was in the kitchen, washing all the dishes of their breakfast. He was smiling to himself, knowing that he is the reason for her wildly beating heart. He couldn't show that to her now what she meant for him, but he couldn't resist her sweet scent. He wanted to kiss her, he wanted to pin her to the couch and explore her body with his hands. But he didn't want to scare her, or give her the impression of a culprit. He didn't want her to feel uncomfortable around him. He got closer but controlled himself on the right time or God only knows what he would have done to her. She was the very lady he had been waiting for. The first time he saw her, he knew that she's his, but he couldn't tell her that. Not so soon. She needs to feel that for herself.

He remembered that night, the night before Sophie was taken. He saw his sire in his dream, saying that Calla is in trouble. He quickly went to her house and found her in a deep sleep.

CHAPTER 7

Flash back (night before Sophie was kidnapped.)

Ethan came back home, had his dinner. He was too tired today, looking after Calla the whole day was tiring. He didn't touch his work. He went straight to bed to get some sleep. He was a vampire but using spells to keep Calla safe takes a lot of his energy. He laid on the bed and thought about Calla. He could still sense the sweet berries scent of her body. Berries are something he couldn't avoid. He loves all kinds of berries. He closed his eyes, it didn't take him long, he fell asleep.

Ethan was sitting on a huge rock in a dark forest. He looked around, he was all alone. Then a familiar scent hit his nostrils and he knelt down on the ground. He bowed his head down in respect and smiled when the scent got stronger. It was his sire, his mentor and for him, his father figure. It was his Master Dalton, it had been a while since he saw him last. Ethan wondered what brought his sire to him. Dalton patted Ethan's back and spoke. "It's been a long time since we last talked. It's always good to see you my boy." Ethan stood up and looked at his sire. Dalton pulled him in a fatherly hug and patted his back.

Dalton had his own kids but none of them stayed by his side like Ethan. Ethan wasn't his blood, but he loved Ethan more than his own flesh and blood. Ethan stayed loyal and faithful to him till he took his last breath. Dalton broke the hug and asked Ethan, "How are you my boy?"

Ethan replied, "I am a good master. What brought you here?"

Dalton sighed and spoke again. "I gave you too much, didn't I?"

Ethan shook his head in disapproval and replied with a smile. "I'm happy to do anything for you. Tell me what is it?"

Dalton looked at the sky full of clouds and spoke. "Have you told her about the rising darkness?"

Hearing him Ethan also got serious and replied. "Yes I have. but as you know, I can't tell her details."

Dalton nodded his head and asked him again. "Is she careful now?"

Ethan also looked at the dark sky and spoke in a disappointed tone. "She is but only for her niece, not for herself. So I have to follow her everywhere to keep her safe."

Dalton looked at him and nodded his head and spoke again. "I know and I trust you. That's why I gave you her responsibility because I trust you." They sat on the rock together, staring at the dark

sky which was darker than usual. Moon and stars were shining bright but still the night was dark and somewhere deep Ethan knew that it's going to be darker.

It was there thing, to sit down somewhere in silence for hours, without a word. Suddenly, Dalton stood up, his muscles were tensed. Ethan stood up with him. He patted Dalton's shoulder and asked him in a worried tone. "What is it Master?"

He replied to Ethan after a few minutes. "You need to go back to her place. Something is up and I can feel it." Ethan didn't say anything but nodded his head and started walking away.

Dalton called him from behind, he turned around and Dalton spoke. "Take care of her and yourself too." Ethan nodded again and left.

Ethan woke up in his bedroom. He quickly got up, wore his clothes and left. It took him a few seconds to get to Calla's house because of his supernatural strength. He used a spell to open the door. He quickly went to her room where both Calla and Sophie were in deep sleep. He looked around and even out of all the windows Calla had in her room. At first there was nothing but then, a strong scent hit his nostrils. It was a creature, a supernatural creature. He went out of her room and found a half turned she-wolf. She was growling, her eyes were green, they were glowing like two mini bulbs. With her sharp claws and fangs, she was ready to attack this vampire dared to enter marked territory of Mr and Mrs Luke. But Ethan wasn't here for her, he had seen her here before, he knew she's not here to harm Calla, she was doing something as Ethan.

Before Mara and Xavier left, when they learned that their sire, Master Braxton had died. They informed this she-wolf to take care of Calla and Sophie as they can't take them both with them. And Xavier could feel something was up. His senses were telling him that someone was after Calla. He had seen someone stalking her, following her everywhere. He talked to this she-wolf and ordered her to keep them safe until they return back home. Ethan had seen it in the wolf's memories, it was one of the specialities of Ethan. He could read minds and also could see the future, just like his Master Dalton. Xavier had hired a few vampires as well to keep a close eye on Calla to know about her stalker. But what Xavier never knew that, this she-wolf and the baby vampires he had hired, couldn't do anything against Ethan. He was more powerful and smarter than even Xavier.

She-wolf lunged herself on Ethan, he easily dodged her attack, then grabbed her by her neck and slammed her on the floor. He looked straight in her eyes for a few seconds, the wolf got hypnotised. Then he ordered her to turn back fully in her human form and go back home. He also made sure to remove himself from her memory, he couldn't afford to be known like this. It would be like, this never happened. He let go of her neck, she got up, turned back to human and left. He then looked at the floor, it had cracks at the spot he slammed her. He put his right palm on the

floor, closed his eyes and started reciting a spell. When he opened his eyes again and removed his palm, the floor was fixed as nothing actually happened here.

He went back to Calla's room to check if all this fight had woken up Calla or Sophie, but they were still in a deep sleep. He sighed in relief and sat on the couch in her room. His stomach growled loudly with hunger. He went downstairs to get something to eat. He opened the fridge and found pasta. He always loved the way Calla cooked pasta. It wasn't the first time he had visited her, or eaten from her fridge. Since Xavier left with his wife, he has been visiting her every night to make sure she's safe. And so many times he had these small encounters with that she-wolf. But it was usual for him now, he would have killed her, but he read her memories, that she keeps Calla safe. So he controlled himself and removed himself from her memories.

Ethan warmed up the pasta and ate it quickly. It was delicious as always. He washed his plate and fork and placed them back in the dish stand. He was about to go back to her room when he saw a new shadow, it was new to him because he had never smelled that scent ever before. The lights were off and it was dark, but he could see everything clearly with his eyes. He tried to look around but no one was around, but the scent was strong and was getting stronger. Whoever it was, it was a man and he was getting closer. He zoomed upstairs and went to the roof to have a better look. He looked around from the roof and found a man, just as he thought.

The man was in his 20s, but he was older. Ethan concentrated on him more and with the help of his senses, he found out that that man isn't a human but a vampire like him. That man couldn't sense Ethan but Ethan saw him very well. He was a newly turned vampire. He could smell fear and also his hunger for blood. Ethan knew he was turned a few years ago. Before he could even touch the doorknob, Ethan jumped on him, grabbed him with his neck and in a flash, they were far away from Calla's house. Ethan took him to a safe distance from the house, he didn't ask him anything, instead he looked in his eyes and found everything he was looking for. That baby vampire was sent to keep an eye on Calla's house and on Calla too. Ethan gritted his teeth in anger. He took his sword from his back and with a single strike, the baby vampire was lying dead on the ground. He put his sword back in its cover. He recited a spell and snapped his fingers once and the dead body of the baby vampire started burning. Ethan turned around and in a flash he was back at Calla's place. He tiredly released a sigh, stretched his muscles a bit and made his way back into the house.

CHAPTER 8

(Flash Back continue)

Ethan came back to her bedroom, he looked at Calla's sleeping figure, she was looking more beautiful while sleeping. He went to the couch and threw himself on it. He laid down on the couch, he was hell tired by now. He hadn't fed in weeks, he was busy keeping Calla safe. Because of not feeding on human's blood he was a bit weak, he was using too much of his powers, practicing new spells, also using different spells for Calla. He needed blood to get back to his full strength. He sighed, a yawn escaped his lips. He closed his eyes.

Just then he heard a whimper, "Daddy." It was nothing for a normal human ear but Ethan heard it loud and clear. He opened his eyes and looked at Calla. She was still asleep but she was having a nightmare. She called again, "Daddy." Tears rolled down her cheeks and he smelled fear with sorrow. He got up and went close to her. She was shivering in fear and was struggling. He got closer and a punch made its way to his cheek. She was throwing punches in her sleep. She was a human but she hit hard. Now she was out of the comforter, he gulped hard when his eyes landed on her creamy white thighs. Another punch was about to strike his other cheek when he grabbed both of her wrists and held them above her head. Her nightgown was short, it ended till her upper thighs, it rose even more when he held her hands. Her creamy thighs were now fully on display for his eyes. She tried to pull her hands out of his hold but he was strong, he didn't let her go.

She opened her eyes and looked at the strange man again. He was so close to her, his hot breaths were fanning on her face. She looked straight in his eyes. Her soft thigh rubbed on his jeans, only then she realized that she was in her nightgown. Her cheeks turned pink as she tried harder to get her wrists free from his tight hold, but failed. Seeing her blushing face he smirked. He looked so hot with that smirk on his face. She tried again to free herself and whispered softly, "Please let me go." Her voice didn't do any good for him. His heart started beating fast and his breaths got heavy. He held both of her wrists in one hand and with the other he pinched her chin softly. He leaned down and pecked her lips. Her eyes widened in both surprise and his sudden kiss. He again pecked her lips and this time she couldn't resist anymore. He kissed her and she kissed him back. Both of their lips were moving in sync. He nibbled her lower lip lightly, asking for entrance. She parted her lips, his tongue slid into her mouth, devouring every corner of her mouth. She moaned in his mouth and he caught the smell of her arousal. He smiled and let go of her wrists.

She quickly intertwined her fingers in his soft sandy blonde hair. Tugging them hard as his tongue moved in her mouth. It was the first time he had tasted her mouth and it tasted just like berries. He broke the kiss when he felt she was out of breath. She gasped loudly for air, breathing heavily she

looked at him. His eyes were glowing in blue color, just like the pendant Sophie gifted her. He cupped her hips and with an easy pull, she was sitting on his lap. Her legs were wrapped around his waist. He wrapped one arm around her waist and with the other hand, he cupped her neck and leaned down. He kissed her neck and she bit her lower lip to block her moans. He licked her earlobe and whispered in her ear seductively. "I want to hear your sweet moans, let them out." He again kissed her neck but she again blocked her moans. He nibbled lightly on her sweet spot and a loud moan slipped her lips. He smiled, mentally patted himself for his victory. He kept kissing and nibbling her neck, her cheeks, her collar bone and ended up on her lips again. But this time he let her go after a few seconds.

She was feeling so hot that she stripped off her nighty and threw it on the floor. She was only in her undies, still on his lap. He didn't look down at her almost naked body. Instead he cupped her face and looked in her eyes until she was hypnotised. He brought his lips close to her ear and whispered. "This is nothing but a dream. You just had a dream. As you will fall back asleep, you'll forget it all, like it never happened." With that he pecked her forehead and made her lay back down on her bed. He pulled the comforter over her body and sat beside her, holding her hand. He told her to close her eyes and she quickly obliged. Soon she fell in her deep sleep. He laid down beside her and also drifted off.

He woke up earlier than usual. Sun was starting to rise. He stretched his arms above his head and yawned. He looked at Calla who was sleeping peacefully. Her both arms were around his waist, holding him close to her. He stroked her cheeks lovingly and kissed the top of her head. He unwrapped her arms, carefully. He didn't want to wake her up. He got up and looked at her for a few minutes. He then settled the comforter over her body again and went out of her room.

He went to the kitchen, filled a glass with water and downed it in one go. He washed the glass and placed it back on the counter. He looked at Calla's room door one last time before leaving the house.

(Flash Back ended.)

She took a few deep breaths to calm herself down. After a few minutes, she felt better. She got up and went to the kitchen where Ethan was washing dishes. She sat on the kitchen counter folding her legs on it, she stared at his back. After a good few minutes he broke the silence and snapped her out of her thoughts. "You know, it's creepy to keep drooling over someone like this." Her mouth hung open in surprise, and her cheeks turned pink again along with her nose. He turned around and walked to her. Still smirking, he looked at her and she narrowed her eyes in embarrassment.

He chuckled and spoke to her. "Don't you have work to do?" She looked at him again then shook her head.

"I'm not going, not until I find Sophie and bring her back home safely." He sighed and pinched the bridge of his nose.

He then cupped her face and replied in a soft tone. "Calla, I know that you love her so much and willing to give up anything and everything for her. But staying away from your work will make the others suspicious. We can't afford that. You need to go back to work, do it as you do usually. Then, you'll come to me in the evening. Then I will train you and tell you everything you need to learn before we get out there to find you niece." She took a deep breath, knowing that he was right. She nodded her head and gave him a small smile. She jumped off of the kitchen counter.

He scooped her in his arms and spoke to her. "Do you trust me?"

She didn't take a single second to think and replied to him. "Yes, I trust you." Hearing her answer he smiled and said.

"Then close your eyes and don't open it until I tell you to open them back." She quickly nodded her head and closed her eyes.

It felt like a few seconds when he told her to open her eyes again. She opened her eyes and looked around. She was now standing in front of her house. He gave her a smile and was about to leave when she held his hand and spoke again. "Hey, I still don't know where you live. How will I find you in the evening?" He turned around and said with a smile.

"Just come back here, you'll find me here." She narrowed her gaze and spoke again in a sad tone.

"Looks like you still don't trust me." He guided her gaze back on his face and spoke.

"I can't do that, I do trust you but you can't know way to my place. Not until you know everything about us, you know what I mean?" She gave him a small smile and nodded her head. He left her and she made her way into the house. She unlocked the door and went in. But only to be welcomed by the whole place fully trashed. Without thinking for a moment, she screamed a name at the top of her lungs.

Chapter 9

Calla looked at the trashy house, everything was fully destroyed. She took in her surroundings and the only thing came up in her to call a name and she screamed that name at the top of her lungs. "ETHAN..." She screamed as loud as she could. She wasn't sure with his superhuman strength, how far he went. But to her surprise, in a second he was standing next to her. He encircled one of his arms around her waist, protectively pulling her close to him, making sure she's fine and safe.

Ethan looked around, everything was broken. (Some one must have come after Calla.) He thought. He sniffed the air to catch a scent but to his surprise, there were none. "How could someone do this to my house?" Calla asked with anger dripping in her voice.

Ethan looked at her, her eyes were filled with tears. He could smell her anger easily. She took a broken frame of her family's photo from the ground. She looked at Xavier's smiling face. A low sob escaped her lips and Ethan felt an ache in his chest seeing her tears. He scooped her up in his arms and carried her bridal style, keeping her close to his chest. She quickly wrapped her arms around his neck and buried her face in the crook of his neck. She was sobbing, she was both sad and angry. Sad because someone just destroyed the house Xavier had built for his family with so much love and angry because she was still helpless against all of this.

Ethan sniffed the air one last time before turning around to leave and again got disappointed with finding nothing. They were about to exit the house when a whimper made its way to Ethan's ears. He heard it clearly. He kept Calla in his arms and looked around for the source. He opened a room and his eyes fell on Sidney, covered in blood and bruises. A loud gasp escaped Calla's mouth seeing her friend in this poor state. She quickly jumped off of Ethan's arms and sat beside her best friend, who was always there whenever Calla needed her but unfortunately, Calla was not able to help her when she needed.

Ethan was shocked that he wasn't able to catch the scent of blood. He was part vampire and yet he wasn't able to smell the blood of this poor woman. He dipped his index finger in her blood and touched it on the tip of his tongue. As the drop of the blood made its way to his throat, he caught the scent as well. He sniffed on Sidney's body and his eyes glowed for a few seconds. He held Calla on his back and told her to hold on as tight as she can hold. He carried Sidney in his arms and zoomed out of Calla's house. He didn't want Calla to be there for another second. He was sure there must be stalkers, stalking her, keeping their eyes on her like she's a prey. He quickly took both of them to his place. As they reached his house, he ran to a room which was close. He kicked the door and it opened. He gently made Sidney lay down on the bed. Calla was beside her now and Ethan zoomed out of the room.

Calla wanted to take her friend to the hospital, Sidney needed a doctor. But she decided to trust Ethan's decisions. She wasn't aware of what's going on around her and Ethan was well aware of everything. Sidney winced in pain and Calla held her hand. She didn't know what to do or how to get her out of this state. Just then the door shoot opened and Ethan came back into the room. He had a normal size wooden bowl in his hands. He quickly came in and sat beside Sidney. He held her head a bit higher than her chest and tried to make her drink something that was in that bowl and was really stinky. Sidney refused to drink the substance and glared at him. "I'm not gonna hurt you, drink it or you'll be dead in no time." Ethan said, which sounded more like a warning.

Calla squeezed her hand lightly and gave her a worried look. "It's okay Sid, you can trust him." Calla said in a confident voice. Hearing her best friend, assuring her to trust this strange man. She started gulping the stinky substance like it was hot chocolate to her. She finished it in no time, Ethan gently put her head back on the soft pillow and covered her body with a comforter.

Sidney drifted off in a few minutes. Ethan pulled Calla out of the room and closed the room, making sure not to wake Sidney up. Calla looked at him with questioning eyes and he heard her question loud and clear in his head. "It was a medicine, it will heal all her wounds in no time and she'll feel better as she will wake up again. But her bones will take a bit longer to be healed." He answered her unasked question, to which Calla just nodded her head. She didn't know why but she trusted him.

He grabbed her hand and pulled her to the living room. She quietly sat on the couch, she wasn't aware of anything that was happening. Ethan sat beside her and asked her in a worried tone. "Are you alright love?" She looked at him and gave him a small smile.

"How much time will it take for her to be fully healed?" She asked him in a worried tone. Sidney and Calla were best friends. They both were like sisters to each other. Calla was worried about her. And she knew Sidney was in pain.

"Don't worry, she'll be fine. I promise." Ethan said with a smile. Calla nodded her head.

Ethan got up and zoomed out of the room, in a few seconds he came back with a book in his hand. Ethan gave her the book, she accepted it with a smile. Ethan left her alone in the living room and went to the basement of his house, where he had a gym. He changed his clothes and started lifting weights. Where Calla was sitting on the couch and reading the book Ethan gave her. At start, she was bored reading it, but then it became more and more interesting and she kept reading it. Time passed and she didn't even realize that for how long she had been reading that book.

Calla marked the book, stretched her arms above her head and stood up from the couch. She felt a bit thirsty, she went to the kitchen, filled a glass with water and drank it all. She felt a bit tired as well, so she decided to take a long hot shower. She went to the room Ethan made her sleep last

night. She looked out of his room's window, it was dark. Sun was set long ago and the moon was shining brightly in the sky. She stepped into the bathroom and stood in the hot shower. Hot water soothed all her tensed muscles. She felt a bit better, then she washed her body and hair.

Satisfied with a hot shower, she stepped out of the shower and wrapped a towel around her wet naked body. She got out of the bathroom and went to Ethan's closet to find herself to wear something comfy. She looked at all his clothes for a long time and pulled out an extra large t-shirt. After picking up the t-shirt, she turned around and bumped into Ethan. She looked at him and found him drooling over her body. Blood rushed faster in her body and her cheeks turned pink. She was all naked if it wasn't for the towel that was still wrapped around her small figure. She started stepping back until her back hit the wall of the closet. Ethan was right in front of her. He put both of his hands on the wall, trapping her between his huge figure and wall. She looked at him through her thick lashes and found a sexy smirk plastered on his lips. Her heart was beating erratically in her ribcage. He took the t-shirt from her hand. She thought he would throw it away but to her surprise, he made her wear it over the towel that was still wrapped around her body. His t-shirt was huge for her small figure, it ended till her mid thigh. He didn't say anything, after making her wear his t-shirt, he pulled the towel off of her body. She blushed even more when his fingers touched her soft thigh. A chuckle escaped his lips as he looked at her blushing face.

"I wanted this towel." He said it and turned around to leave the closet but stopped at the door.

"It looks cute on you. You can keep it." Saying that he exited the closet, leaving her with her crazy beating heart and pink cheeks. Her mind reminded her of his sweet words and a cute smile appeared on her lips.

CHAPTER 10

After Ethan was done in the gym, he stretched his body and made his way upstairs. He wanted to take a shower before dinner. He went to his room and was about to enter the bathroom when the sweet smell of fresh berries reached his nostrils. Inhaling it deeply, he filled his lungs with it. He knew Calla was around. He made his way to the closet and found her standing in nothing but a towel, that reached to her upper thigh. She was in deep thoughts, she was swaying her hips in a rhythm. It was like she was playing a song in her own head and dancing with the rhythm. Ethan slowly made his way to her, it was like his feet dragging him to her. She picked a t-shirt from his closet and turned around and bumped into Ethan. She looked at him through her thick lashes, her cheeks were pink.

Ethan controlled himself, took the shirt from her hand and made her wear it. Once done he purposely pulled the towel off of her body. Her heart would have jumped out of her ribcage as his fingers brushed lightly on her bare thigh. Blushing hard, she lowered her gaze. Ethan chuckled and said, "I wanted this towel." Calla knew she saw three more towels, hanging in the bathroom, so why would he need this towel. Ethan turned around and walked away.

He stopped at the door and without even looking at her he spoke again in a teasing voice. "It looks cute on you, you can keep it." Saying that he left her in the closet and rushed into the bathroom.

Calla smiled and exited the closet. Ethan heard her happy humming and groaned in frustration. She had no idea, he had already turned on when he saw her swaying her hips in the closet and now this humming was too much for him to handle. He sighed and let cold water run all over his body to calm his desires. He had never felt this way before. His master used to tell him everything about love and the one who is made for you. He also told him that sometimes, it becomes really hard to control the desire. He shook his head and continued with cold water running down his body. He came out of the bathroom and changed into comfy jeans and shirt. A familiar aroma hit his nostrils and in the next second, he was standing in the kitchen. Calla was cooking pasta, still humming. She turned around and screamed when she saw Ethan standing behind her. Making an annoyed face she spoke. "Don't sneak like that, you scared me."

Ethan smirked and replied. "I will try but no promises." Calla rolled her eyes on him knowing there is no way to win from him.

Ethan took his seat on the dining table and kept looking at her. She dished the pasta in two plates and came to the dining table. She sat on a chair beside him and they ate in silence. After dinner Calla went back to the room, not sure if she could sleep in his room. Ethan came into the room to take the spare pillow. Ethan didn't leave the room, he went to the couch and laid down. He pulled

the comforter on his body and closed his eyes. Calla smiled and went to the bathroom to do her night business. She returned back and laid down on the soft bed. She pulled the comforter over her small figure. She thought about her friend right next to her room. She was worried about her. As if Ethan heard her loud and clear, without opening his eyes, he replied in a soft tone. "You will see her in the morning. She'll be fine by then." A small smile made its way to her lips. Calla also closed her eyes and drifted off.

"Aunt Cal..." Calla heard Sophie called her name playfully. She looked around, it was dark and she found herself into a dark yet beautiful forest.

"Aunt Cal, if you don't find me this time, you'll lose."

Calla looked around to find her niece but it was dark. "Where are you Sophie?" Calla called her out but she didn't come out. Calla heard a cute giggle and started running into the forest aimlessly.

"Baby, please come out, I'm worried about you." Calla called out but nothing. Then she saw shadows behind her. People wearing dark capes, she saw riders like that night, their faces were covered with the hoodies of their capes. They were all moving in the same direction. Calla followed them, they all came to a halt and Calla stopped as well. They all were looking at something or someone. She passed through them to look for the center of their attraction. Her eyes widened in horror when she saw Sophie standing in the middle of the forest, smiling cutely. Sophie's smile faded away when her eyes fell on her aunt standing between those creepy riders.

"Aunt Cal, run, runaway from here." Her face had a horrified look.

Calla Tried to run for Sophie to get her but she screamed to stop her. "NO! They aren't here for me, they want you now. Run." Calla looked around and found them looking at her now. She still couldn't see their faces but they were terrifying. Calla started moving backwards, as they started walking towards her. Her heartbeat was fast and her throat went dry in horror. The riders were getting closer but she couldn't run. She was just moving backward slowly. Just before they would have gotten her, somebody grabbed her by her elbow and pulled her out of that horrific scene. Wrapping their arms around her protectively, they rubbed her back lovingly.

"I'm here, you're safe." A soft whisper reached her ears and she looked up at the person who was holding her.

"Ethan!!!" She whispered his name and threw herself on him. She wrapped her arms around his neck and held him close like her life depended on it. She closed her eyes, buried her face in the crook of his neck and sobbed.

When she opened her eyes again, she was back in Ethan's room. She looked at Ethan who was holding her small figure protectively. "Are you okay?" Ethan whispered with a worried look on his face.

She didn't answer his question, but asked him a question. "How did you know I was in the forest?"

Ethan sat straight, cupping her heart shaped face, he spoke again. "It was just a dream Calla. And I will be there even if you need my help in your dreams." Her eyes widened when she heard him. It felt so real yet it was just a dream, a very horrible dream. Tears welled in her baby eyes when she remembered she saw her niece in that dream. Ethan pulled her in his lap and wrapped his arms around her. She buried her face in his chest and sobbed hard. He held her tightly and rocked her back and forth in his lap. After a few minutes, she felt a bit better just then she realized, she was sitting on his lap and he wasn't wearing any shirt. Her cheeks burned and she tried to push herself off of him. He chuckled and understood the reason for her blushing face. He made her lay back down on the bed and held her hand.

"Go back to sleep. I'm here." He reassured her with a smile, she smiled back and closed her eyes. In a few minutes, she drifted off. She was holding his hand tightly, he didn't want to wake her up. Ethan also laid beside her on the bed, pulled her small figure close to his large one. He inhaled the scent of berries from her body and closed his eyes as well. In a minute, he was in his Dreamland, dreaming about her.

Next morning, Ethan woke up before Calla. Her arms were wrapped around his neck and legs around his waist. She was holding his body close to hers. His heart skipped a beat when he imagined her legs around his waist like this but naked. He gulped the hard lump that was formed in his throat when he imagined her soft skin rubbing his hard body. He groaned in frustration and slowly tried getting himself free from her hold. He crawled out of the bed and went to the bathroom. He knew he had to take a cold shower again. He came out of the bathroom, just a towel hanging on his waist dangerously. Calla gasped as she looked at him and her cheeks turned pink. She hid her face in her hands and ran into the bathroom. Ethan chuckled and went to the closet to wear his clothes. Calla sighed and did her morning business. She took a quick shower, brushed her teeth and got out of the bathroom. As she entered his room, she saw her clothes were placed on the bed. It was skinny jeans and a stunning pink striped top. She wore her clothes with a smile.

Ethan came back to the room and spoke in a serious tone. "I have to go and deal with something important. Your friend is up and she's waiting for you. I'll be back by the sun set but if anything happens while I'm gone, you'll call me, okay?"

She gave him a confused look and spoke. "But I don't have your number."

Ethan chuckled and spoke again. "I don't have any. All you have to do is to call my name and I will be here." She smiled and nodded her head. Ethan zoomed out of the room and Calla went downstairs. She looked at Sidney, who was sitting on a seat with the kitchen counter. Calla quickly ran to her friend and hugged her.

"Are you okay? I was so worried." Calla said in a worried tone.

Sidney patted her back and said. "I'm fine Calla, thanks to Mr Carter."

Calla sat on the seat beside her and spoke again. "What happened to you yesterday?"

Sidney's smile fell and she replied in a serious tone. "You'll know about it soon Calla. But I'm relieved that you're fine." Calla nodded her head.

They started eating their breakfast that Ethan made for both of them. A few minutes passed and Calla couldn't hold her curiosity anymore. "How can you be fine like nothing happened to you?"

Calla asked, Sidney chuckled and replied to her friend. "Simple, I healed."

Calla was now more confused, she asked back. "All your broken bones are fully healed in one night. Am I missing something?"

Sidney rolled her eyes and replied. "Yes, I heal fast, because I'm not a human like you." Calla raised a brow and Sidney understood the question that was written on her face. "I'm one of the creatures, a she-wolf actually."

CHAPTER 11

"I'm one of the creatures, a she-wolf actually." Sidney said with a proud grin on her face. Calla looked at her with shock visible on her face.

"Am I the only one here who is a normal human being?" Calla said as she got up and left the kitchen. She couldn't believe it. Xavier, Mala and even her best friend kept her in the dark. They didn't trust her to tell her the whole truth. She felt like she was meeting strangers. Calla ran to Ethan's room and locked herself.

"Calla, open the door. Please let me explain." Sidney said, knocking on the door. Calla was sobbing but managed to speak.

"Go away Sidney, I don't want any explanations, nor I want your sympathy." Her voice cracked into the end of her sentence. She buried her face on Ethan's pillow and cried. She kept crying until the exhaustion engulfed her and she fell asleep.

Sidney went back downstairs and waited for Ethan to come back home. She didn't know how to handle this situation. Calla was a very cool minded person. She rarely gets angry. Sidney never got to deal with angry Calla. She sat on a couch in the living room and thought about the whole conversation she had with Ethan, in the morning.

FLASH BACK.

Smiling brightly, Ethan came out of the room. He went downstairs to prepare breakfast for both of the ladies and for himself either. He entered the kitchen and found Sidney sitting on one of the seats.

"Who are you? And how do you know Calla?" She asked in an angry tone. She wanted to know everything about this mysterious man. Ethan sighed and turned to look at her. He then went close to her and looked straight in her eyes.

After a few seconds his eyes glowed and he murmured. "Remember..." he stepped back and went to the kitchen, leaving Sidney standing and staring at the wall. All the memories of this stranger came rushing her mind. She felt a bit dizzy with all the sudden storm of memories in her brain. She sat down and closed her eyes. She saw everything clear. She has been seeing him around Calla since they first met. Every time Calla was in trouble or needed help. He was there to help her.

Ethan was cooking in the kitchen and Sidney went to him. "You... and Calla... but... why?" She couldn't form a question. Her mind was still a mess with all the old memories.

He understood her question and replied. "It's my destiny." He didn't say anything else and Sidney just nodded her head.

"So you know her since when?" Ethan replied to her in his usual serious tone.

"I have known her since she was convinced." Sidney gave him a confused look. She didn't understand what he meant by that.

"It's all I could tell you. It's not something you should know more about." Ethan replied in a warning tone. Sidney somehow understood that they both are connected, otherwise an ancient vampire like Ethan would never come and rescue a human like Calla.

"So what are you planning to do now?" Sidney asked to which Ethan slapped his hand on the kitchen counter and replied in an irritated tone.

"As I told you. This isn't your problem. So you better mind your own business creature." Sidney rolled her eyes and spoke.

"You know I'm her friend." Ethan replied to her back in a second.

"I know, but still I don't trust you." Sidney asked back.

"I know I'm a creature but that doesn't mean I'll hurt her. I can control myself." Ethan raised a brow and asked back.

"Are you sure that you'll never hurt her?" Sidney knew he knew about that too. The most horrible night of her life.

"How do you know about that?" She whispered her question and Ethan replied.

"When I said, I have known her since she was convinced, I wasn't joking. I was the one who saved her that night from your beast."

Sidney gasped and replied. "Did I hurt her? I can't remember what I did to her that day."

Ethan replied in a low tone. "If I wasn't there on time, your beast would have killed her."

Sidney was speechless. "It was me who made you stay away from her during full Moons."

He added to which Sidney nodded her head. "What stopped you? Why didn't you tell her or make her stay away from me?" Sidney asked back.

Ethan was now angry and very irritated with this conversation they were having. He turned around and said in an angry tone. "Look, I did what had to do. Stop asking me questions, creature. I don't think I have given you any sort of authority to ask me random questions like this. You're her

friend, be her friend but stop interfering in my life or you'll regret it." He said that and exited the kitchen. He went back to his room, and Sidney sat back on the couch in the living room.

FLASH BACK END.

Sun was starting to settle down. Sidney was waiting for Ethan to return back home. She knew she couldn't leave Calla alone. Door unlocked and Ethan came in. Sidney stood up and went to the door. "Now what happened?" Ethan asked in an irritated voice.

"She locked herself in your room." Sidney replied.

"What?" Ethan almost screamed. "Couldn't you just get in and check up on her if she's fine?"

He added to which Sidney rolled her eyes and replied. "I would have if someone wouldn't have used 20 different protection spells on their door."

Ethan sighed and replied. "I did it on purpose when the time was close for her to be here." Sidney just nodded her head and thought.

(You should be grateful to me that I gave you this favor, what a rude blood sucker.) She turned around and said.

"I better leave, I still need to tell my alpha what has happened. He must be thinking that I'm taken like others. He has been searching for answers, but found nothing" Ethan nodded and Sidney went to the door.

She was about to leave when Ethan called her from behind. "Creature, if you think this was a favor then I'll return that favor now and here. I don't keep favors, especially from shapeshifters. Go and tell your alpha that it's riders who are taking people."

Sidney gave him a confused look and spoke again. "What do you mean?"

Ethan replied. "You won't understand. Just go to your alpha and tell him that. He'll get an exact idea of what I mean." Sidney turned around and left.

Ethan quickly went upstairs, to his room. He snapped his fingers 3 times and opened the door. He stepped inside the room and found Calla sleeping peacefully on the bed. There were dry tear stains on her cheeks. Ethan's heart skipped a beat with the thought that Calla was crying. He went to bed and sat down beside her. He cupped her face and caressed her cheek with his thumb. Calla frowned her brows, she tried to move away so she could sleep peacefully. Ethan chuckled softly and stroked her cheek with the back of his fingers. Calla slapped his hand and opened one eye. She looked at Ethan who was smiling. She turned around to get back to sleep but Ethan grabbed her by her shoulder.

"I know you haven't eaten anything. Get up, we are having dinner." Ethan said. Calla tried to free herself but failed.

"I'm not hungry. I'm sleepy. Now go away." She tried again to get herself free but failed again.

"I said we are having dinner, so dinner first." Ethan replied with a smirk.

"No, go away." Calla almost screamed. Ethan raised a brow, Calla was fighting to free herself. Ethan grabbed her wrists and pinned her on the bed. Calla's eyes widened in shock and she looked at Ethan. He was smirking, knowing she can't win from him. Ethan's breath fanned upon Calla's face and her cheeks turned pink. Ethan kissed both of her cheeks, then her forehead and then started leaning in. Ethan's lips captured her lips. She tried hard to resist but she couldn't. Ethan bit her lower lip lightly and she opened her lips, giving him entrance. As his tongue slipped inside her mouth, she moaned softly. He smiled and let go of her wrists. She quickly intertwined her fingers in his soft hairs, tugging them lightly and his hand grabbed her hips to get closer to her. After a few minutes he released her and she gasped loudly, filling her lungs with oxygen. He smiled looking at her swollen lips and she smiled back. He pulled her close to him and hugged her. She rested her head on his chest, inhaling his scent. Ethan then broke the hug and pinched her chin lightly.

He guided her gaze to him and asked. "Do you want to know the truth?"

CHAPTER 12

Calla nodded her head and Ethan crawled out of the bed. He gave her his hand to help her out. Then he pulled her out of his bedroom. Ethan took her to the top floor of his big house. She looked around, everything was clean but still untouched. He opened a huge door and pulled her in. The room was beautiful. Her eyes widened in shock as the room was almost decorated as she always wanted. She looked at Ethan and asked. "Why did you bring me her?" Ethan sighed, sitting on the edge of the bed and patted the bed for her to sit beside him. She walked to him and sat beside him. He took a deep breath and started explaining.

"It was my Master's room, Master Dalton." His voice had a hint of sadness, Calla held his arm and gave him a small smile.

"Was his room?" Calla asked, unsure of how to ask him directly.

"He's dead. He died a long time ago." Ethan replied, his voice cracked at the word "died". Even after so many years, he couldn't just accept the fact that his master is gone and he's never coming back.

"I'm so sorry Ethan. I can feel your pain as I can feel he was so special for you." Ethan nodded his head and sneaked an arm around her waist, pulling her even closer to himself.

"He still is. I wasn't his blood, but he kept me as his own, like his own flesh and blood. Not only him, his wife and his children as well." Ethan said with a small smile on his face.

"So vampires can have kids. All these stories about vampires can't have kids, are nothing but a lie?" Calla asked.

Ethan looked at her for a few seconds and then replied. "It depends..."

Curiosity rose in Calla's mind. "Depends upon what?"

Ethan sighed and started explaining. "If we are talking about my parents, then my mom was a witch and my father was a vampire. A witch can conceive with a vampire. In case of my Master, then he was a born vampire, a born vampire can impregnate a human. But if we are talking about Xavier and Mara, your step sister and brother in law, then that's one of the most rare cases."

Calla frowned her brows and asked in confusion. "What do you mean? What's so special about them?"

Ethan looked at the painting of his Master and explained to her. "It was known as just a myth, until we came across Xavier and Mara. They both were turned vampires, both of them had the same master, who had turned them both. Xavier was turned long ago when Mara wasn't even born..."

Calla cut him in the middle. "Okay wait! What do you mean by that?"

Ethan chuckled and explained. "Xavier was about 200 years old. Do you know how they actually met?"

Calla shook her head and replied. "No. No one ever told me that."

"Xavier was kind of a messenger, for your mother. Your mother was a normal human being but she knew stuff about the supernaturals. Xavier used to visit her and Mara fell for him. Your mother was more than happy with them together. Xavier was a great man. He took care of Mara, loved her and also loved you." He replied and wiped off the little tear that slipped out of Calla's eye.

"As we all know, he was a turned vampire, he couldn't have kids but they got Sophie, your niece. It is a myth that a turned vampire could impregnate another turned vampire. If they have convinced a child during the solar eclipse." He explained. Calla opened her mouth but Ethan already knew what she wanted to ask.

"During the solar eclipse, the Moon gets powerful. And we supernatural creatures are connected with the moon and its powers. During full Moons we get powerful and during a solar eclipse, we get to the peak of our power. So on the peak of our own powers, anything is possible. Mostly the children like Sophie are called magical born or a miracle. Because turned vampires can't impregnate without any magical spell." Calla nodded her head and just kept listening to Ethan.

"And about Sophie, she is even more special. She was convinced during the solar eclipse and was born on the blood Moon." He said.

Calla looked in her lap and spoke. "How do you know this much about my family?"

Ethan just chuckled and replied. "Because of you." Now Calla was very confused.

Ethan understood and said. "I'll show you something that will help you to understand everything." Ethan said and zoomed out of the room. He came back in a few seconds with an album in his hands. He sat back on the edge of the bed and handed her the album.

"Open it." Ethan said. Calla opened the album and the first picture she saw was her own picture, a bit vintage kind of picture. Calla shut the album and stood up from the bed.

"What is this? Do you think I'm joking here?" Calla said with anger. Ethan chuckled because he knew what she was thinking. Not just because he could read her mind but because of the picture she just saw.

"It's not you Calla. Have you ever worn these types of clothes in your life?" He said. Realization hit Calla and she opened the album again. Going through the whole album she was giving shocked looks to Ethan.

"This is one of your ancestors. You're exactly like her." Ethan said and Calla looked at him.

"Who are they?" Calla asked.

"This album belongs to my Master's family. This woman you're looking at..." he pointed his finger on a lady in the picture and continued. "... She is the wife of my Master, his only love Lilly. And a mother to me after my family died."

Calla looked at him and back to the album. "So you're saying, your Master is one of my ancestors?" Calla asked.

Ethan nodded his head and spoke again. "Yes! That's exactly what I'm saying."

Calla nodded her head and Ethan continued to explain. "My Master fell in love with Lilly. She was beautiful, smart, caring and very protective and brave. They both were in love. My Master proposed to her and she accepted. They got married and had 3 kids. 2 sons and a daughter. They were a happy family. Lilly never liked to be a vampire. My Master never did anything against her wishes. She turned old and grey but my Master loved her everyday more than yesterday."

Calla had a cute smile on her face and she patted his shoulder. "They must be an ideal couple."

Ethan nodded his head and spoke. "More than ideal." Calla nodded and looked at the painting in the room.

"So which child do I belong to?" Calla asked.

"The oldest one, his name is Ashley. He is a very good man."

Calla raised her brow and asked. "Is a great man?"

Ethan chuckled and replied. "Yes! He is still alive. It's still not his time to die. Not yet." Calla blinked her eyes a few times, taking all the information in that Ethan had given him.

"So how come my mom died?" Calla asked.

"Simple, she was a human. Unfortunately not all of us are chosen for these powers. The guardians choose a few of us to have these kinds of special powers." Ethan explained.

Calla gave him a serious look then spoke again. "So you're saying I'm unworthy to this stupid power?"

Ethan couldn't control any more. He heard those words out of her mouth and started laughing hysterically. She was partially jealous of him and his powers. "Ha ha ha! Not funny Mr Carter." She stood up and was about to leave when Ethan grabbed her by her wrist and pulled her hard. Calla ended up landing upon his hard chest. He pulled her even closer, that she was now sitting on his lap.

He cupped her face and spoke. "You have no idea what you have in here..." he pointed his index finger on her chest. "... you're more than powerful Calla. Never compare yourself with us. We are powerful but not like you." Calla's cheeks turned pink. He pulled her to his chest, wrapping his arms around her. She quickly wrapped her arms around his neck.

"So since when do you know me?" Calla asked.

"The day Lilly had passed away." Ethan replied.

"And when was that?" Calla asked again.

"Five hundred years ago."

CHAPTER 13

"Five hundred years ago." Ethan said and Calla looked at him.

"How is that even possible?" Calla asked, Ethan grinned widely.

"It is possible Calla, everything is possible. We are not talking about nature, it's supernatural. You can't even imagine how things work with us." Hearing him, Calla was now getting more and more nervous. She wasn't sure if she could do it.

"You can do it Calla. I'll teach you everything you need to learn." Ethan said and Calla nodded her head.

"So that means you knew me before I was even born?" Calla asked.

"Yes, you can say that." Ethan replied.

"Care to tell me? I thought you said you'll tell me everything." Calla said and Ethan chuckled.

"What do you want to know?" Ethan asked.

"Everything." Calla replied.

Ethan took a deep breath. He stood up, grabbed her hand and pulled her out of the room. He took her to the roof of his big house. The moon was shining bright in the sky and the weather was perfectly normal, it wasn't warm but it wasn't chilly either. Ethan sat on the ground and patted the space besides him for Calla to sit. "Come sit and I'll tell you everything." He said and Calla went to him and sat beside him.

Ethan looked at Calla and started explaining everything to her. "As I told you, I wasn't my Master's kid. But to both him and Lilly, I was their child and I also addressed them both as my parents. Lilly was never turned, so she aged, turned old and grey and died. I have spent about 20 years of my life with Lilly. After that she died. I was 10 when I went with my friends to help them. When I returned I saw my whole house burned." Ethan explained, Calla gasped hearing him. She held his hand and gave it a little squeeze. Ethan looked at her and smiled.

"I'm so sorry Ethan." Calla said.

"I know, it's okay." Ethan replied.

"Who did that?" Calla asked him.

"My mother was a very powerful witch. After marrying my father she became even more powerful. I was their only child. We lived with both my father's parents and my mother's parents. There

were few witches, who wanted my mother to perform a ritual for them. That ritual would have allowed them to use their magic to create or destroy lives or families or even kingdoms. My mother refused. The ritual should have been performed in a limited time. The time passed and my mother never performed it. So they made a plan to kill us all in the house. My friends came to my house to call me to help them. I went to help them. They said that one of my friends had stuck in a deep dark well. When we reached the well, I suddenly felt someone hit me. My vision got blurry and I fainted." Tears started to fall from Calla's eyes, she stayed quiet and kept listening to Ethan.

"When I opened my eyes again, I found myself in that well. They hit me and threw me in that deep dark well. I felt pain in my arm. The darkness around me. I couldn't even see my own fingers with my eyes. I was just 10, you can imagine how horrifying it would be for a kid." Ethan asked and Calla nodded her head as she wiped a tear away from his cheek.

"After a few hours I should say, I heard voices, few people were crossing by the well. I knew that was the only chance I could get out of that hell hole. I stood up and screamed for help as loud as I could. In a few seconds, a man called for me. I replied and he jumped in to get me out. He was very strong and wise. That was the very first time I met Master Dalton. He got me out then asked me about my address. I gave him my address and he took me to my home. But by the time we reached home, it was too late. The whole house was burned along with my parents and my grandparents." Ethan said.

"Couldn't they just get out?" Calla asked.

" My friends didn't just leave me there to die, they made a small cut on my arm to take my blood. They gave my blood to those witches, they used my blood to create a boundary line my family couldn't cross, not until I would have allowed them to, but until I came back, they were all nothing but ashes. Master didn't leave me alone. He took me in, he even found and punished every single person who was involved in the murder of my family. Master had kids, I thought I would never be accepted but they all accepted me happily. I became part of this family. I was 30 when Lilly died. After her death, one night when I was sitting with my Master, he told me about you. He said that there would be a girl, exactly like Lilly. And told me that I will be her guardian. I will guard her with my life and keep her safe. I asked him how I would know it's you. He said time will tell you and teach you everything about your future. I never asked him anything else but kept his words in my mind." Ethan stood up and offered his hand to Calla. She took the hand and he led her back into the house. They went downstairs. Ethan took her to the kitchen and made them dinner. They both are in silence. Calla was thinking about everything while Ethan also stayed quiet.

After dinner Ethan took her back into his room. She went to the bathroom, got freshened up and changed into her night clothes. She stepped out of the bathroom and Ethan went in. After a few minutes, Ethan came out freshly showered. He was in his PJs. He crawled into bed and held Calla

close to him. "Do you want to know what happened next?" Ethan asked, Calla just nodded her head.

"About a hundred and fifty years ago, my Master called me in his room one night. He was sitting in his chair, I sat on the ground but he told me to sit beside him, on a chair. He then reminded me that the girl would soon be born and I have to guard her. I promised him I would do everything I can to keep her safe, keep you safe. He then told me that his time had come. He'll die soon. It was another horrible truth that one day we have to die. He was right, he died the next month and I went away. I had forgotten everything, I knew my Master told me something he had learned from the future he had seen. But I looked for you for so long that it felt like it was nothing but a joke or something. It all started again the night you were conceived. I can't explain to you what I felt but it was like hope came back to my life. I came back here and tried to find you. I thought you must have been born or something. But to my surprise, you were just conceived and your mother was told that she was pregnant. I was able to hear your heartbeat since It had first started beating. I waited for nine months to see you. I can remember, a few minutes after your birth, I got the chance to see you. I made the nurse leave your room and she left you with me alone. You were in your crib and were about to start crying. I carried you in my arms, you opened your eyes and smiled. I was shocked by your actions but at the same time, your smile just melted everything inside me. That time, you changed everything in my life." Calla cut him in the middle.

"Wait, what do you mean by changing everything?" Calla asked.

Ethan replied in a sad tone. "I wasn't the same good vampire all my life. There was a time when I was nothing but a monster." Calla looked at him but didn't say a word.

chapter 14

Calla was shocked. She had seen him angry but even with anger he was very gentle. "What do you mean?" Calla whispered.

"After my Master's death, I went away. I went to Los Angeles and got settled there. I took over a territory, did a lot of bad things. But I never killed anyone. Killing any innocent soul wasn't my thing. But yes, I was king. I did whatever I wanted to do. And I enjoyed my life there, dictating people, forcing them to do as I say. But the day you were conceived, it all changed. Nothing could bring me peace as every single fiber of my being wanted to be around you. I left everything and came back here. The time I held you in my arms and you gave me a smile, that changed everything for me. You melted the stone that was covering my heart." Ethan said and kissed the top of her head.

"What happened then?" Calla asked.

"Then I looked after you, like I had promised my Master. Every time you were in trouble, I rescued you. Every time you needed help, I helped you. Do you have any idea how many times I had completed your homework for you so your teacher would not touch you or scold you?" Ethan said and Calla giggled.

"What do you mean by doing my homework? I remember I had always completed my homework by myself." Calla said.

Ethan shook his head and replied. "That's what I made you remember. But in reality, there were so many times when you didn't complete your homework and your teacher scolded you or punished you. And every time you ended up crying. In the beginning, I used to punish your teachers but then I thought it's better to just complete your homework for you." She huffed in anger and he smirked.

"I will make you remember everything I erased from your mind. I wanted you to grow up normal and have everything you wanted to have in your life." He said it in a serious tone.

"Then what?" Calla asked.

"I stayed around you but at a safe distance. But when that pig proposed you and I read his mind, I lost it. I tried to tell you but you didn't listen to me. So I had to make him listen to me. I went to his place that night and made him maintain a safe distance from you." Ethan explained.

"What was in his mind?" Calla asked.

"I called him pig for a reason. You were the most beautiful woman in the college for him and you were wealthy as well. You were a jackpot for him." He tried to drop the topic but she didn't let him.

"What did you read Ethan?" She asked again.

Ethan sighed and replied. "He wanted to impregnate you so he could bind you to himself forever." Calla gasped hearing him. She couldn't believe Henry could do such a thing. She always thought he was a gentleman but she was wrong. She thought of him as a friend but he was nothing but a dirty pig, a pig indeed.

Tears started flowing down her cheeks as she cried quietly. But Ethan knew she was sad and sobbing quietly. He rubbed her back and spoke. "I would never let him touch you. I didn't let him even kiss you."

She looked at him, gave him a small smile. "Thank you." She whispered and Ethan nodded and kissed her forehead.

"Do you know who took Sophie?" Calla asked once she stopped crying.

"Yes, I know." Ethan said.

"Will you tell me?" She asked again.

Ethan sighed and said. "You remember those Rides you saw in your dreams?"

Calla nodded her head. "They are called Storm Riders, they are the ones behind Sophie's disappearance and the others' disappearance as well. It is said that they take people who have any supernatural ancestry or bloodline. They take them away and make them slaves for themselves. But if we're talking about Sophie, then her case is different." Ethan explained.

"Why is it different for her?" Calla asked.

"I told you about Sophie being one of the rarest kinds, I wasn't joking. Sophie was convinced during the solar eclipse and was born on the blood Moon. Both times were when the Moon was at the peak of its powers. It's said that the one who is convinced during a solar eclipse and is born on blood Moon are pure blood. This is why Sophie isn't a slave for them but their queen. They take pure blooded kids or people to make them their ruler. Only the pure blood supernatural creatures are meant to be the leader of the Storm Riders." Ethan explained.

"Can't we just get her?" Calla asked.

"No, not until the Rise of the Dark Sun." Ethan replied.

"What do you mean?" Calla asked back.

"I don't know that either. My Master just gave me a hint that we have time till the Dark day. Until then Sophie is safe with the Riders." Ethan explained.

"Why would she be safe there?" Calla asked.

"As far as I know, someone is after her. But until she's with Storm Riders, she's safe. They must be treating her like their queen." Ethan replied.

"Are you sure she's safer there?" Calla asked in a worry laced tone.

"I promise you Calla, when the time is right, we will get her out of there but right now, she's safe and sound." Ethan said.

"What if the recent leader got jealous of her and hurt her?" She asked and Ethan burst into laughter.

"Storm Riders never get jealous. They are not like us. They don't have emotions for anyone but for their kind and their future. For the present leader, Sophie is his future. He will pamper her and spoil her. He must be making her wishes come true, even if she would ask for her parents, she'll get them." Ethan explained.

"How's that even possible? They are dead." Calla asked.

"I'm not sure but once I heard my mom saying that they can create illusions." Ethan replied.

"So they won't be real but for Sophie, she got her parents back?" Calla asked.

"Yes." Ethan said.

"I don't know if she will choose me over her parents." Calla said in a sad tone. Now Ethan was very angry. He could bare anything but her sadness or tears. He remembered the time he had kissed her and a smirk made its way to his lips. A mischievous plan was ready in his mind. He had craved for her for 500 years and he can't control himself anymore. He swung himself and within a blink of an eye, he was above her. He caged her between bed and his hard body. She gasped and asked him.

"What are you doing Ethan?"

He smirked widely and replied. "I'm going to teach you a lesson. You're really annoying me with your tears." Calla felt her heart stopped for a few seconds and became wild under her ribcage. Her breaths were heavy and her cheeks turned pink.

Ethan leaned in and captured her lips in a passionate kiss. As his lips touched her lips, she felt electricity shooting through her body and ended up in the pit of her stomach. He bit her lower lip and she parted her lips for him. He slipped his tongue in her mouth, tasting every inch of her mouth. She moaned in his mouth when his fingers brushed her bare thighs. He broke the kiss and spoke. "Open your eyes Calla."

Calla opened her eyes and found him looking at her. She saw so many emotions dancing in his sexy blue eyes. Care, possessiveness, respect and love. She wasn't sure but she saw what she saw. "Every time I see you crying, my heart stops beating. Please do me a favor and never cry again or I swear to God I will die." He said. With that he captured her lips again in a toe curling kiss.

chapter 15

Calla woke up the next morning earlier than Ethan. He wasn't on the bed with her anymore. He was sleeping on the couch. Calla crawled out of the bed and went to the couch. She stood beside the couch and looked at Ethan, sleeping peacefully. She knelt down on the ground, put both of her elbows on the couch to balance herself and stared at Ethan. She was smiling looking at him. She couldn't help, he looked so cute while sleeping. "I'm not cute. Stop drooling over me." Ethan said, eyes still closed.

Calla's eyes widened in shock. She quickly got up and was about to step away from the couch. But Ethan grabbed her hand and pulled her. She lost her balance and ended up in Ethan's lap. He sat on the couch, wrapped his arms around her waist and pulled her even closer. Calla's cheeks were pink and she lost her voice. She put both of her hands on Ethan's chest to push herself off of him but it didn't work. Ethan was smirking, he knew she was struggling to get out of his hold and terribly failing. Ethan leaned in and brushed the tip of his nose with her cheek. She gasped but didn't stop him, she never knew why but she always liked the way he showed care for her. But it wasn't just care, she was sure.

Ethan was looking at her, she was blushing hard. He found it really cute whenever she looked at him through her lashes. They were still sitting on the couch, Ethan wasn't planning to let her go that easily. But just then, Calla's stomach growled loudly. Ethan tried hard not to laugh but he couldn't control it and ended up laughing hysterically. Calla felt so embarrassed and she hid her face in her palms. Ethan grabbed her hands, removed them from her face. She looked at him, embarrassment still visible on her beautiful face. "You shouldn't feel embarrassed in front of me you know. I have even seen you naked so many times, then why just feeling embarrassed over your stomach making sounds. So many nights, you've slept in my arms and you don't know. I know every single mole on your body. " He said that with a wink.

Ethan pecked her cheek. She shivered with the thought of Ethan seeing her naked. Ethan chuckled softly and loosened up his arms. She quickly got up and ran into the bathroom. Ethan sighed and left the room but didn't try to read her mind.

Ethan freshen up in the other bathroom and went downstairs. He stepped into the kitchen and started cooking them breakfast. Ethan was feeling uneasy but he brushed it off and kept himself busy in the breakfast he was cooking. He dished it out in two plates, one for Calla and one for himself. He went to the dining table, took his seat and waited for Calla. He waited and waited and waited, but she didn't come. He felt his chest tightened up but he didn't pay attention. The breakfast was now cold as ice. "Why isn't she here by now." He thought. He looked at the clock, it

was 3 hours. He stood up and went upstairs to his room to check if anything was wrong. He opened his room door but she wasn't in the room. He went to the bathroom door and knocked it gently. "Calla, are you okay?" She didn't reply. He used his vampire sense. He heard her extremely fast heartbeat. He also smelled fear. He quickly broke the door with his vampire strength as he thought she was in trouble or needed help. She looked at him and her sobs became a bit louder. He walked to the bathtub where she was sitting. She pulled her knees to her chest and hugged them tightly as in to protect herself from him.

He sat down on the ground beside her. He felt like someone had sliced his heart, seeing her cry was something he could never bear. "What is it Calla? Did I do something wrong?" He asked, his voice was heavy with sadness and pain he felt in his chest. She didn't reply again.

"Calla please, if you want to kill me then kill me but don't cry. It's more painful than my own death." He said as a tear fell freely from his eye. She looked at him, he could see the fear in her eyes.

"You were my stalker?" She said. It was more a question.

"It wasn't like that Calla." He said, He scooped her up in his arms and carried her bridal style. He brought her to his room and made her sit on the edge of the bed. He sat on the ground, grabbed her hand and kissed her palm.

"At least let me explain." Ethan said. She shook her head.

"How can I trust you that easily? You can do anything to me and no one will ever know what happened to me." Hearing her answer, he felt his anger rose.

"How can you disrespect me like that? I wasn't a stalker, but the one who saved your life more than once." He yelled at her and she jumped hearing his angry voice.

"I don't believe you." She whispered. Ethan lost everything just at that moment. He grabbed her by her neck and slammed her on the soft mattress.

"You dared to call me stalker and things after I saved you so many times that you can't even count." He yelled through gritted teeth.

"How can I...I k.know you are telling me the truth. I remember n..nothing." She stuttered. He looked in her eyes for a few seconds, she felt herself lost in his deep blue eyes.

Just then he whispered in her ear "Remember everything about that evening when you almost died." He said and zoomed out of the room.

He could not stay in that room any longer or he would have hurt her. She had awoken the monster inside him. The same monster who had fallen asleep when she was born. He left her alone and went to the basement. He was so angry, he couldn't bear his anger anymore. He started trashing his

things. He lifted weights and threw them on the mirrors that were covering the walls. He broke all the machines with his fists. He was still feeling crazy. He picked up the fridge from the corner of the gym and threw it on the ground. Everything inside the fridge spilled on the ground. He destroyed the whole gym. He knelt down on the ground, he couldn't control his tears anymore.

On the other side, Calla was coughing hard, he almost had choked her. She was still lying on the bed as a hidden memory came back to her mind. It was when she had started her high school. She was just 14 and went on a camping trip that was planned by the school.

CHAPTER 16

FLASH BACK...

TEN YEARS AGO...

"Come on Cal, or we'll miss the bus." Sidney yelled from the door of Calla's house.

"Daddy, I'm full. I can't eat anymore. Moreover, I'll be late and they will leave us." Calla said while patting her full tummy.

"No you need to finish it or you'll feel lazy and weak throughout this whole trip." Xavier said. Calla was now pouting like a baby.

"Xav, stop being overprotective. I know you still don't want her to go for that trip." Mara said, annoyed with her husband's overprotectiveness towards her sister.

"Yes, I don't want her to go and I'm going to ask you one more time Cal, please don't go." Xavier said in a pleading tone. Mara rolled her eyes and Calla giggled.

"It wasn't a question daddy, it was you, pleading to me not to go." Calla said.

"So don't go, please." Xavier said in a worried tone.

"Cal! For the love of God, please come out or I'm leaving now." Sidney yelled again.

"Wait for me, I'm coming." Calla yelled back. "Please Daddy, Mara help me you promised me." Calla said in a pleading tone.

Mara sighed and picked Calla's bag from the ground, made her wear it and before Xavier could protest again, she took Calla to the door and kissed her cheek. "Stay safe sister, call Xavier if you can and eat on time." Mara said with a smile.

"I promise I will, bye bye, LOVE YOU DADDY." She yelled the last sentence for her brother in law.

"LOVE YOU TOO, STAY SAFE." Xavier yelled back but didn't come out.

Calla came out and hugged Sidney. Sidney sighed in relief and said. "Gosh, your family is crazy. Who does that to a high school student?" Calla laughed out loud.

For Sidney, that all was still too dreamy. "My family, call them crazy, but I love them like that." Calla said to her friend. Sidney sometimes tells her that Xavier isn't protective but he wants to cage Calla. But Calla knew Xavier always had loved her as his own daughter. Calla hadn't seen her father

ever. He died before she was even born. But Xavier was always a father figure for Calla. Even before he was married to Mara, he ever cared for Calla like a father. And when Calla's mother died, Mara and Xavier adopted her and raised her as their own. After all, she was only five when her mother died.

Calla and Sidney got out of the bus and looked at the camping spot, it was beautiful and breathtaking. They both jumped up and down in happiness. They both set their tent together. After that they went for a walk. Sidney felt hungry, she came back but Calla wanted to reach the cliff and take some pictures of the beautiful scenery. Calla reached the cliff and took out her camera. She started taking snaps. "You know, if you lose your balance you're dead." Calla heard that voice and turned around to see, it was none other than Janet. Janet was a cheerleader and she was a brat. She always tried to harm Calla as she was more popular in school.

"Go to hell Jen, I'm not interested in your lame threats." Calla said in an annoyed tone. She turned back around and started taking pictures again.

"Are you sure they are lame threats?" Janet said, Calla gave her an annoyed look and left. She spent the rest of the day with Sidney. After dinner they all were exhausted, so the guide allowed them to sleep early. They all went to tents. Calla and Sidney went to theirs, Sidney got into her sleeping bag and in a few minutes she was snoring. But Calla couldn't sleep. It was because Sidney was snoring so loud. Calla was habitual of sleeping in all peace and quiet. After an hour or so, Calla got up and went out. She looked around, everyone was sleeping and it was dark and cold. Calla started walking towards the cliff again. She liked that place so much, it was peaceful and quiet. Calla sat on the edge of the cliff, her legs were hanging down in the air. She took a deep breath, inhaling chilly fresh air in. She wrapped her arms around her body and looked at the sky. It was a full moon night. Moon was big and extra shiny. Calla smiled and started singing the lullaby her daddy sings for her whenever she's feeling low or couldn't sleep.

Uncle sun has gone to sleep,

It is dark outside.

But baby you don't need to fear,

Daddy will always be by your side.

For the birds those sings,

And the stars that shine,

You are the only princess, my sunshine.

No monsters under the bed,

Daddy will always check.
No bed bugs will ever bite,
My princess will always sleep tight.
For the rain that falls,
For the fairies those fight,
You are the only princess, my moon pie.
Your smile makes the flowers bloom,
Your eyes sparkle like glittery night.
Your heart is bigger than the ocean blue,
Your shining hair makes the world bright.
For the roads ahead , difficult to easy,
We will always together fight.
Daddy will love his princess Calla,
The love of his life.

Calla heard a crack, like a twig cracked under the foot. Calla was about to turn but someone pushed her. Calla lost her balance and fell. She heard an evil laughter, she knew it was Janet who had pushed her. She was about to hit the ground, she closed her eyes and a tear slipped her eye. She didn't hit the ground but felt someone's holding her tightly and protectively. She opened her eyes and found a very handsome and muscular man. He sat down on the giant rock with Calla on his lap. She felt safe with him, in his arms. He hugged her and rubbed her back soothingly. "Shhh... it's okay, you're fine. Calm down, no one can hurt you. I won't let anyone hurt you." He lovingly cooed her.

Calla buried her face in his chest and sobbed for a while. His masculine scent and warmth made her fall asleep. He didn't let her go. He kept her in his arms. Sun started to rise when Calla opened her eyes again. She was clutching his shirt tightly and still on his lap. She looked at him, he was awake. He stroked her cheek lightly with the back of his fingers. "How are you?" He asked her in a worried tone. Calla's cheeks turned pink.

"I'm fine thank you." She just whispered. He pecked her forehead and looked at her again.

"Last night you gave me a heart attack. If I wouldn't be here, only God knows what would have happened. I promise I will protect you till my last breath. But you have to promise me that you'll

take care of yourself as well. I will die if anything happens to you. You don't know but you're my everything." Ethan said with teary eyes.

Calla wiped his tears and whispered. "I promise." Ethan smiled and looked into her eyes for a few seconds.

He then whispered in her ear softly. "Nothing had happened to you last night. You slept on the cliff and you woke up alone. You hadn't seen me, it was just a nightmare." He said that made her close her eyes. He scooped her up in his arms and took her back to the cliff. He laid her down on the ground, kissed her forehead and left. He then went to Janet, he grabbed her by her neck and pinned her with a tree. Looking into her eyes he whispered. "Every time you'll look at Calla or even think about her, you'll see boogie man around you. Who will scare you and make your life nothing but a living nightmare." He said and pulled away.

"Poetry credit, Niharika Katare (Serena)"

CHAPTER 17

Calla woke up and looked around. She was still at the cliff. She quickly got up and went back to the campsite. Sidney looked at her best friend and ran to her. She wrapped her arms around Calla and pulled her in a hug. She pulled away after a few minutes and yelled. "What the hell Calla? You gave me a heart attack. Where were you?" Calla gave her a guilty smile and rubbed the back of her neck.

"You were snoring so loudly last night. I couldn't sleep. I went to the cliff and sat there. I don't know when I fell asleep there. I'm so sorry." Calla replied.

Sidney sighed and again hugged her friend. She was so worried to even think that Calla was missing. "No, you're not real, you're not real. Stop, leave me alone." They both heard someone yelling. They turned around and found Janet yelling crazily.

They both looked at each other and again at Janet. "What happened to her now?" Sidney asked.

Calla shrugged her shoulders. "I don't know. She was fine last night." Calla said which was the last thing she remembered before everything was dark.

FLASHBACK END.

Calla opened her eyes and started sobbing. She got up from the bed and went out of the bedroom, barefoot. She didn't know he was just teasing her and that he could never hurt her. She wanted to apologise for her mistake and all the misunderstandings. She went downstairs and looked around but he was nowhere to be found. Calla looked in the kitchen and all checked all the rooms as well but nothing. Then she went to the basement. She climbed down the stairs and opened the door. Everything was trashed and fully destroyed. Ethan was sitting on a couch, he's head in his hands and elbows resting on his knees. Calla slowly walked towards him carefully avoiding the shredded mirror pieces. He didn't look up. Calla knelt down on the ground in front of him and grabbed his hands. He looked at her with red eyes. She wiped his eyes and cupped his face. "I'm sorry. I didn't know that. I'm sorry for being so judgy." She apologized with guilty eyes. Ethan got up and exited the gym. He went upstairs and zoomed out of the house. Calla also got up and was about to follow him but shredded pieces of the broken mirrors pierced through her feet. She yelped in pain and fell down on the ground. She looked at her feet which had wounds and were bleeding. She still got up and tried to follow Ethan. Crawling through the staircase, she went back to the ground floor but Ethan was already gone. She laid down as she didn't have any strength left to even call him. She closed her eyes and the darkness engulfed her.

Ethan was so angry at her that he didn't even listen to her apologies and left her alone in the house. (You don't trust me. Stay alone for a while then you'll understand everything.) He thought to

himself. He felt pain but didn't pay any attention. He was out of the house but still not too far away. He laid on the ground, closed his eyes and drifted off. He next opened his eyes at night. Moon was shining brightly, it was late. He got up and went back home. He opened the door and a familiar scent hit his nostrils. He walked in and found Calla laying on the ground. Her feet were wounded and were bleeding. He quickly ran to her, scooped her up into his arms and carried her bridal style. He took her to his room, cleaned up all the wounds. He removed all the glass shreds from her feet. He applied ointment and bandaged her feet. He then cleaned up the house and went to the kitchen to prepare dinner for both of them.

Calla woke up and found herself in his soft bed. She needed to pee. She stood up on the ground and screamed loudly. Because of the sudden pressure, her feet started bleeding again. Door burst open and Ethan came into the room. Seeing her wounds started bleeding again, he quickly grabbed the first aid kit and sat beside her. She was sobbing quietly. He removed the bandages and started cleaning her feet. He didn't speak a word and kept cleaning her wounds. A loud sob escaped Calla's lips and she clapped her hand over her mouth. He didn't look at her but kept his eyes on her feet. "I'm sorry." She said that and she started crying loudly. She didn't know, either she was crying because of the pain in her feet or because of the pain she can feel in her chest.

Ethan quickly pulled her in his lap and rubbed her back. "It's okay. Don't cry Calla." Ethan whispered.

"Did you forgive me?" She asked. Her voice cracked due to the pain.

Ethan sighed. "Were you afraid of me?" Ethan asked and Calla nodded her head. "Why? Why were you afraid of me?" Ethan asked her again.

She laid her head on his shoulder. "You said you know about every single mole on my body. I couldn't remember anything about you except for the Beach party and that shop." She replied.

Ethan wrapped his arms around her and held her tightly. "It's true that you have seen me before but you can't remember because I had erased all those memories. I admit I have seen you naked so many times but that doesn't mean I would have touched you that way." He explained.

He then cupped her face and caressed her cheeks lightly with his thumbs. "The night before Sophie vanished, I admit I had lost my control but I hadn't done anything wrong. Yes, I had kissed you but I stopped myself before things could get more serious." He explained.

Calla narrowed her eyes as she remembered what she had said to him. She felt guilty. Ethan kissed her forehead. "It's okay. I should be the one to feel guilty. You won't be able to walk for a while." Ethan said.

"I forgive you." Calla replied. He pinched her chin lightly and guided her lips to his. Before he could kiss her she pulled back.

She saw pain in his eyes and she quickly replied. "It's not because of you. It's because I need to pee and I can't hold it anymore and I'm sitting on your lap and..." she explained shyly.

Ethan started laughing and she hid her face in her hands. He scooped her up and took her to the bathroom. He made her sit on the toilet and said. "I'm waiting outside. Once you're done just call me okay?" Calla nodded her head and Ethan left.

Calla quickly finished her business and called Ethan back. He took her back in the room and made her lay on the bed. "You need to eat. You hadn't had anything since morning." Calla nodded and Ethan went to the kitchen to bring her the dinner he had cooked.

He came back with a bowl of chicken soup. He sat beside her and fed her himself. Calla ate it without a single word. She was hungry and tired. Once done, Ethan made her lay down on the bed and then he went back to the kitchen. He cleaned up the kitchen and went back to the room. Calla was still awake. Ethan went to the bathroom, took a long shower, changed into his PJs and came back out. Calla was still awake. Ethan shook his head and was about to move towards the couch when Calla held his hand. "You can sleep in your bed." Calla said.

"No, I'll be fine on the couch." Ethan replied.

"Please, I said I'm sorry." Calla pleaded and Ethan raised his both hands in defeat.

"Fine, you win. Gosh you are so manipulative." Calla smiled and Ethan laid beside her.

"Close your eyes and get some rest." Ethan sided and pecked her forehead. She quickly closed her eyes and snuggled closer to him. Ethan's smile widened and he wrapped his arms around her.

"Good night Ethan." She said.

"Good night my love" he replied and closed his eyes as well.

CHAPTER 18

THREE WEEKS LATER:

Calla washed her body, she was in the bathroom. Her feet were better, she was able to walk now. Calla wrapped a towel around her body and stepped out of the bathroom. She went into the closet and changed into a yellow t-shirt and black skinny jeans. She slowly made her way downstairs. She looked around for Ethan but she wasn't on the ground floor. She went to the basement and found him lifting weights. She looked around, everything was now at its place like it used to be. It felt like nothing had happened there. She hadn't come here since that day. He looked at her and smiled. She smiled back and went to the couch. She sat on the couch and kept staring at him. "I'm hungry." She said and held her tummy. Ethan put the weights down and looked at her.

"I don't remember you hiring me as your Butler. You are free to go and cook into my kitchen." He replied with a smirk. She raised a brow at him.

"Oh really, but I remember you promised your Master that you'll take care of me. What if I went into the kitchen and my finger got burned or cut or both?" She said with a teasing smirk on her face.

Ethan shook his head at her statement. "Whatever, you're hungry. Go and cook for yourself." He replied and started lifting weights again. She stood up and went to the fridge. She looked inside the fridge which was filled with water and blood.

"Eww... disgusting. You keep this stuff here." She said. In the blink of an eye, Ethan was behind her. He pulled her away from the fridge and shut it. Calla was standing in front of a mirror. He gave her an angry look and she blinked her lashes innocently. He then pinned her with the mirror and leaned in. He reached to her neck and nibbled her sweet spot lightly. She moaned but her stomach growled out louder than her moan. He sighed and raised his both hands in defeat. He scooped her up and threw her over his shoulder. She giggled as they went upstairs. He made her sit on the kitchen counter. "So, what would you like to eat?" Ethan asked her.

"Pancakes with whipped cream." She replied.

"Okay." He said and busied himself in preparing her breakfast.

After breakfast, she went to the living room and he went to his master's room. She was reading a book but she wasn't interested in that. She was now getting bored. She stood up and went to the room of his master. "I'm bored." She said as she stepped into the room.

"Calla, I'm working." He replied.

"But I said I'm bored." She said again.

"What do you want me to do Calla?" He asked in an annoyed tone.

"You can dance in front of me. That will be perfect entertainment for me. I can't say naked because I don't want to be in trouble." She said with a smirk. He looked at her, shock visible on his face. Seeing his face she started laughing and he shook his head.

"It's a bit important. I will dance for you once I'm done." He replied and busied himself in his work. He was preparing a magic potion. She laid on the bed and kept looking at him. They were closer now. She started trusting him more and he was careful. He gave her a memory a day. He was right, there were so many times when he had done her homework for her. She could even remember the time when she had an assignment to complete but she went to the party. He completed that assignment for her. There were so many nights, she had fallen asleep in his arms.

She felt a feather-like kiss on her cheek and she came back on Earth. Ethan was laying with her and they were in the spoon position. "What were you thinking, Calla?" He whispered in her ear.

"Nothing new. I was thinking about the memory you gave me back today." She replied. He buried his face in her neck and lightly kissed her sweet spot. She smiled and closed her eyes. "What did you mean with someone looking for Sophie?" Calla asked.

"I am still looking into this but I'm sure someone is looking for her." Ethan replied.

"But what made you think this way?" Calla asked.

They both sat up, Calla was looking at his face. He grabbed her hand and intertwined his fingers with hers. "Before Sophie was taken, I was at your place that night. I saw a vampire stalking, keeping a close eye on you. But that's what I thought. He wasn't sent there for you. He was sent to keep an eye on Sophie. But your blood made him lose control and he made a mistake. Luckily, I was there on time to save you. Then the other day, when we found your friend at your house. I went back to look for any sign or clue but everything was clear. Your house is like it used to be. Just a few things missing and guess what, all of those things belong to Sophie." He explained.

"Who could that be? And why would anyone try to stalk a child? She's just a baby." Calla said. She was both angry and sad at the same time. She felt helpless.

"Probably, just because she is pure blood. As I said they are very rare and if I'm being honest, kind of impossible to find." Ethan replied.

"So, that's something for the Storm Riders and they took her. So why stalking her now and taking her things?" She asked.

"It's not Storm Riders, they took her now they are probably looking for you. It's someone else. Someone I can't put my finger on." Ethan replied.

"I wish daddy would be here to explain all this." Calla said and a tear escaped her beautiful eye.

"Trust me when I say Xavier didn't know anything about it. He doesn't even know that his Master actually never died but was killed." Ethan explained.

"Wait, he had a Master. Like your Master?" Calla asked

"Yes. Xavier and Mara, both were turned by the same Master, his name was Braxton. If I'm being honest, he was almost my age, a few years younger than me. He was a powerful vampire but not so smart. All I know is he is dead but it wasn't his time. That means only 2 things. Either he messed up with time or he was killed. And I know he wasn't really a person who would mess up with time or rules of nature." Ethan explained.

"So that means someone actually killed him. But why and who?" Calla asked.

"Right now, I'm not sure. All I saw was the same spot at the highway where Mara and Xavier died. Every time I followed clues or my super senses, I ended up there. I'm still looking for the answers." Ethan replied.

"Why at the same spot? Does it have some sort of connection? Am I missing something? I really don't understand." Calla said.

"As I said Calla, I'm not sure right now. I am not even sure why the Storm Riders haven't found you yet?" Ethan said.

"Wait, I thought you were joking." Calla said.

"I wasn't. You are someone who can end this wild hunt. I don't know how you can do that but you can and Storm Riders are looking for you. Why haven't they found you and how are you still safe? I don't know and I'm still searching for answers." Ethan replied.

"That's what Sophie said in that dream. She said, They aren't here for her, they want me now." Calla said as she remembered the dream she had of her niece.

"Which dream are you talking about?" Ethan asked.

"You remember when you pulled me out, the Storm Riders were about to get me and you pulled me away from them." Calla replied.

"Why hadn't I heard her saying that to you?" Ethan asked.

"I don't know. She said that and I can still hear her words in my head." Calla replied.

"Does it mean that she's the one who is keeping you safe?" Ethan asked.

CHAPTER 19

Ethan woke up in the morning. He looked at Calla who was sleeping peacefully on the bed. He went to the bathroom, did his morning business and took a shower. He stepped out of the bathroom and went to the closet. He changed into his casual white t-shirt and black jeans. He stepped out of his bedroom and went to his master's room. He remembered everything Calla told him. He sat on the edge of the bed and looked at the painting of his master on the wall. He rubbed both of his hands on his face in frustration. "What am I missing?" He thought and ran his thick fingers through his hair. The information he got from Calla was something new.

"The time will tell you and teach you everything about your future, but what about her future Master. I can't do this alone. I thought protecting her was my duty. But all this is too much for me Master and you aren't here to tell me what to do next? I'm lost, I don't know what to do next? I don't even know Where I am standing? I can't do this without you, I have never done anything without you Master." Ethan said in a sad tone. He was missing his Master.

Calla came from behind and wrapped her arms around his neck. She kissed his cheek and held him tightly. "It's okay Ethan. And you are not alone. I'm here with you." She cooed him. She then stood up and offered him her hand. Confusion was visible on his face but he took her hand. She pulled him up. He stood in front of her. She wrapped her arms around his waist and he did the same. He held her closer and inhaled her berries scent deeply. It calmed him a bit. He took a deep breath and kissed the top of her head.

"Better?" She asked with a smile.

"Better..." he assured her. He picked her up and threw her over his shoulder. He took her to the kitchen and made her sit on the counter. He was about to turn but his t-shirt stuck into something. He looked for the source and found Calla's chain. She pulled it out of her neck to get it free from his t-shirt. His eyes glowed brightly as he looked at the blue pendant that Calla kept hidden. He held the pendant for a closer look. "Where did you get this from?" Ethan asked.

"Sophie gifted me this on my birthday. The same day I saw you the second time, well as I can remember. But, Why? What is it?" Calla asked in confusion.

"This is the reason why the Storm Riders still are looking for you but can't find you." Ethan said.

"What do you mean Ethan?" Calla asked back.

"Did Sophie choose this for you?" Ethan asked.

"No, she made me choose. She held so many pendants I chose this one. What is this thing?" She asked him again.

"Do you remember each and every pendant she chose for you?" He asked.

"Yeah, I do. But why?" She questioned.

"Great then, you have to show me all of those pendants." Ethan replied as he picked her up in his arms.

"Wait, why?" Calla asked.

"I'll tell you everything once I'm sure it's what I think it is. Till then keep quiet." He said as he scooped Calla up in his arms and carried her bridal style. He zoomed out of the house and in a few minutes he was standing in front of the fantasy gala. But it was not in their town anymore. It was in another town. He sniffed the air and closed his eyes. He opened them again and in the blink of an eye they were in that same shop where Sophie had brought her. "Agatha, are you home." Ethan yelled as they entered the shop.

"My Master, I'm always here at your service. What can I do for you?" A woman in her late 50s said. She came out and bowed her head, showing respect for her master. She was short with grey hair neatly pulled in a bun. Even though she was old, she was stunning.

"Do you remember this young lady Agatha?" Ethan asked the old lady pointing his finger at Calla.

"Yes, I remember her. I remember her, my Master. You told me her name, Calla." Agatha replied.

"Do you remember she was here with a child? The child almost looked like her." Ethan asked.

"Yes, my Master. I remember everything." Agatha replied.

"That child picked a few pendants that day and Calla chose this one..." Ethan said and showed Agatha the pendant Calla was wearing. "... do you remember all the pendants that child picked up and showed Calla?" Ethan asked.

"Of course my Master. Do you want me to show you all those pendants?" Agatha asked and Ethan nodded his head. Agatha went inside a small room in the shop. After a few minutes Agatha came back with her hands full with all the pendants. "Here you go Master." Agatha said as she handed the pendants to Ethan.

"Calla, tell me, are these the same pendants that Sophie showed you?" Ethan asked Calla.

"Yes." Calla replied.

Ethan examined all the pendants one by one and with each pendant, his eyes glowed brightly but not as brightly as it glowed when he saw the pendant Calla was wearing. "Where did you get these Agatha?" Ethan asked the old lady.

"My Master, I got them a hundred years ago from a broken fairy. She gave me these before she died. I was shocked that day when that little girl asked me to give her these. Never in a hundred years, anyone had asked me for these pendants." Agatha replied.

Ethan examined them all again, for one last time and gave it back to Agatha. "Leave us alone for a few Agatha." Ethan said. Agatha bowed her head and left Ethan with Calla. Calla raised a brow at him, he made her sit and held her pendant in front of her. "Yesterday, it was a question. Is Sophie the one who is protecting you. Now I have the answer. Calla, Sophie is the one who is protecting you. She gave you this pendant for a reason. All the pendants Agatha had shown us, were enchanted. And not just enchanted, they are all enchanted by a powerful fairy. This is the reason why Storm Riders can't find you. And they won't be able to find you in future as well." Ethan explained everything to her.

Tears filled in her eyes as she heard Ethan. "She should have asked me to buy her another. She would be here with me." Calla said between her soft sobs.

Ethan wiped her tears with his thumb and cupped her face. "This could never have saved Sophie, I think she knew it. That's why she played it smartly and gave you this. And you chose this one, this one is more powerful than all the others. I think the special powers of yours I talk about, they made you choose this one." Ethan explained.

"Why couldn't it save her? And why is this more powerful?" Calla whispered.

"Agatha, we are leaving." He yelled. He made her wear the pendant again, scooped her up in his arms and zoomed out of the shop. In a few minutes, they both were in Ethan's house. He took her to his Master's room, he made her sit on the edge of the bed and he also sat beside her. "As I told you, Sophie is pure blood. This pendant and its power, can't hide the powers that child has in her. Thousands of pendants like this might hide her from the other powerful creatures but no one can hide her from Storm Riders. As per your second question, this pendant is more powerful because that fairy had used her blood with her fairy dust on it. I can still smell her blood. That's why it is more powerful than all those together. Calla, Sophie played it very smartly and she knew what she was doing. You need to stop crying because you are going to help me to get your niece out of the Riders world. We're gonna free all of them." Ethan said confidently and Calla nodded her head. He pulled her close and pecked her forehead. "I promise, we will find her." Ethan reassured her.

CHAPTER 20

Next day, Calla called Sidney at Ethan's place and then all three together went to Calla's house. As Ethan had said, everything was in its place, except for a few things that belonged to Sophie. Calla went into hers and Sophie's bedroom and sat at the edge of the bed. Ethan and Sidney also came into her room. Ethan sat beside Calla and Sidney sat on one of the couches. "This is very abnormal, I mean come on, I am not ancient like you but I know enough. I can't even pick up my own blood scent and I almost bled to death if it wasn't for you guys." Sidney said. As they all stepped into the house, Sidney started sniffing around to find any scent but she couldn't even find her own scent. She sniffed the air again but got disappointed when she found nothing.

"Whoever it is, they must be using dark magic. Otherwise there is no way they could erase all the people who had come here." Ethan replied.

"So now what? We can't just sit here and do nothing." Calla asked.

"No, we're not. I don't know why but I feel like we have to go to the highway. I feel like starting from there?" Ethan asked.

"Why? Am I missing something?" Sidney asked.

"You're not missing anything, creature. You know Braxton, Xavier's Master?" Ethan asked.

"Yes, he died months ago." Sidney replied.

"Don't you feel anything like it was a set up. Mara and Xavier went to his funeral and ended up dead as well?" Ethan asked.

"What do you mean by set up Ethan, it was an accident, that's all?" Calla asked.

"That's what you think Calla. We vampires can survive this kind of small accidents. In fact, their car wasn't even that much destroyed." Ethan replied.

"You're right, that's what I thought when I saw their car but never asked as I knew never Mr Luke never actually told Calla anything." Sidney replied.

"So you both are telling me that it wasn't an accident, then what was it?" Calla asked angrily.

"Murder." was the only word that came out of Ethan's mouth. Calla gasped and tears welled up in her eyes.

"We are not fully sure of it but if you're asking me, then I'll totally agree with him. I know there are no clues for us to prove that it was a murder, but that's till we try to find the clues." Sidney said.

"If it is true and they were actually murdered, then what?" Calla asked and wiped her cheeks.

"Then we will find them whoever is behind their murder." Ethan replied.

"He's right. And maybe we'll find something about Sophie's stalker as well." Sidney said.

"If you both think it is the best idea we have right now then okay. I'm ready to go back there." Calla said.

"Let's go then." Ethan said as he stood up. He offered his hand to Calla. She accepted it and he helped her to stand up.

"You guys enjoy your romance. I'm gonna run back to my pack." Sidney said with a wink. Calla's cheeks turned pink and Ethan growled to warn Sidney. "What? Like I'm not aware of what you guys have been doing in that house in your alone time." Sidney said with a smirk. Calla buried her face in Ethan's chest.

"Creature, you really want to die here and now? If not then get out." Ethan said as he rubbed Calla's back.

"Fine, I'm going. Who needs me here now?" Sidney said dramatically. Ethan growled loudly and Sidney ran out of the house, laughing hysterically.

Ethan scooped Calla up in his arms and carried her bridal style. He went downstairs and then exited the house. "Are you ready?" Ethan asked.

"I want answers and my niece. For that I have to go there, so yeah, I'm ready." Calla said with a sigh.

Ethan nodded his head and started running in the direction of the highway. Because of his super human speed, it took him a few minutes to reach the highway. He stopped at the spot where Xavier's car was found with both Mara and Xavier dead in it. Calla took a deep breath and Ethan made her stand on the ground. To calm her nerves, Ethan pinched her chin lightly and guided her lips towards his. He softly kissed her. He broke the kiss after a minute or so. "I'm here with you." He said and grabbed her hand. Calla and Ethan walked side by side. In a few seconds, Ethan and Calla both saw fog. As Calla walked further towards the fog, it started to fade away. Ethan understood that it's a spell that had been used to hide something. He quickly knelt down on the ground, he dug his fangs in his wrist and blood pooled out of his veins. He let it drip on the ground for a few seconds, then he brought his wrist to his mouth and licked it three times. Calla saw his wounds disappear like they weren't there at all. Ethan dipped his index finger in his blood and started drawing something. He drew a circle first, then a diamond shape in it and at last he drew two stars, one at north and the other in south. He then put his palm on it and started reciting a spell over and over again. He recited the spell five times. Calla saw bright blue sparks around

Ethan. Ethan then stood up and sniffed the air, a sexy smirk appeared on his face and he turned to face Calla. "Smart, but not so smart." Ethan said.

"What was that?" Calla asked.

"A spell, I told you I am a part witch as well. I used a spell that had finished the effects of the spells that had been used here." Ethan explained.

"Spells had been used here, but why?" Calla asked again.

"To hide the truth. Now I am a hundred percent sure about Xavier and Mara's deaths." Ethan replied.

"You mean they were actually murdered?" Calla asked with her eyes full of tears.

Ethan pulled her to his chest and wrapped his arms around her. "I promise you, whoever is involved in this despicable act, I will make sure to send them to hell by my own hands." He pinched her chin lightly and guided her gaze at his face. "I promise I will make them pay for what they have done. I promise you Calla." He added. Calla also wrapped her arms around his waist and he also pulled her even closer. He picked her up in his arms. He carried her bridal style and zoomed back to Xavier's house.

"I thought you would be taking me back to your place?" Calla asked as she felt exhausted.

"It's time to find out about what kind of spell is being used here to hide their dirty businesses." Ethan said as he again dug his fangs in his wrist. He repeated every action he did on the highway. Calla saw the blue sparks again and it faded away. Ethan stood up and sniffed the air like he did on the highway. "What a fool to use the same witches at both places?" Ethan said.

"What do you mean?" Calla asked.

"I mean that whoever it is, they are using the same witches to cast spells and hide their crimes. But not so lucky because, firstly, all the witches aren't even a hundred year old and secondly, because of lack of experience, they made some tiny mistakes and got caught. I can find them really easily." Ethan explained Calla with the same sexy smirk on his face.

"Witches, as in more than one, plural?" Calla asked.

"Yes, more than one. If I'm being specific with the number then it's 93 witches." Ethan explained.

"Now what?" Calla asked.

"Now, we are going back to my place and I am going to teach you how to defend yourself. Only then, we can start our journey to find Sophie and the murder of her parents." Ethan said.

CHAPTER 21

"Why did you bring me here Ethan?" Calla asked. She looked around the open ground she and Ethan were standing in. Ethan didn't tell her anything about where and why he was taking her. He just told her that they are going somewhere.

"We are here to teach you to fight." Ethan replied as he stripped off his jacket and threw it on the ground.

"But I know how to fight. I can even kick your butt." Calla replied with a mischievous grin on her face.

"I know you can fight, all thanks to me. Well, not all thanks but if it wasn't for me, you wouldn't have learned to fight. I am the one who made you this perfect." Ethan replied. Now his face held the grin and Calla's mouth was on the ground.

"What do you mean?" Calla asked as she recovered from the shock that was given by Ethan.

"How about I just show you? Come, hit me. Hit me as hard as you can." Ethan said.

"Are you sure?" Calla asked and Ethan started laughing.

"Yes Calla, I'm sure. Now come and hit me." Ethan reassured her. Calla tightened up her ponytail and stretched her muscles a bit. She looked in Ethan's eyes and decided her aim. She aimed at his stomach. She ran in his direction as fast as she could. Ethan was watching every single move she made. She came close and was about to punch his stomach hard when Ethan grabbed her elbow and twisted her arm behind her back.

"Aaaaa..." she screamed in pain.

"Make it hard for me Calla. It was the easiest trick you just used." Ethan whispered in her ear and licked her earlobe.

"Oh yeah." She said. She threw her head back and head-butted him on his face.

"God, shit. What the hell?" Ethan screamed loudly. Calla chuckled. Because of the sudden impact, her arm was out of his tight hold. She turned around and winked in his direction.

"That is called the real revenge baby." She said and Ethan raised a brow at her.

"Okay then, let's move forward. I know you can fight and kick anyone in butt. But fighting supernatural creatures isn't that easy. You first need to choose a weapon. I have brought a few here.

Choose one and choose wisely." Ethan said as he showed her the wooden weapons in a huge bag Ethan had carried. Calla carefully examined all the weapons and chose a sword.

"This one." Calla said and showed him a wooden sword.

"A sword, are you sure Calla?" Ethan asked with a shock visible on his face.

"Yep I am sure." Calla replied confidently.

Ethan took the other sword and held it in katana style. Calla observed his actions and tried to copy him. "Don't copy me Calla. You should hold it as you're comfortable with it." Ethan said and Calla nodded. She quickly held it in reverse grip. Ethan smiled and lunged at her. For about an hour or so he kept attacking her and she kept blocking all his attacks. A few times she got hit. But he only cared about her to learn to use the weapon she had chosen for herself. After an hour he realized that she can't take it anymore. He stopped and packed the bag. He held the bag and grabbed her hand. They both started walking towards his house.

They stepped inside the house and she laid down on the couch. Ethan chuckled and scooped her up in his arms. He took her to his room and made her lay on the bed. He went to the bathroom and filled the bathtub with warm water. He added her favorite fragrance and stepped out of the bathroom. "Go and get yourself cleaned up. I'll be waiting for you here." Ethan said. Calla turned around but Ethan's low growl made her stand up. She went to the bathroom and peeled off her clothes. She dipped her fingers in the tub and slowly got into the bathtub. She moaned as the warm water soothed her aching muscles. She laid into the tub and enjoyed the warmth of the water with her favorite lavender fragrance. After a few minutes when she felt her muscles weren't tense anymore, she took the shampoo and washed her hair. Then she took the soap and washed her body. Satisfied with her body fully washed and fresh, she hopped out of the bathtub. She drained the water and wrapped a soft towel around her small figure. She went to the mirror and looked at her small body. There were few bruises on her body. She sighed and wrapped a small towel on her head. Calla stepped out of the bathroom and sat at the edge of the bed. She was exhausted with all the work out and training with Ethan. She laid down on the bed and closed her eyes. And within seconds, she fell asleep.

Ethan left Calla in the room and went to the kitchen to cook dinner for both Calla and himself. He fried Chicken quickly and went to his Master's room. He had a few things left to finish. With teaching Calla a better fighting technique, Ethan was also searching for the answers. He was searching for Xavier and Mara's killer and also for the person who was looking for Sophie after she was taken. He opened his mother's book that he found outside of his parent's house. He closed his eyes and started reciting the spell to locate those creatures. But to his surprise he found nothing. "Shit." He cursed and ran his thick fingers through his soft blonde hair. He started to feel pissed at the situation. But he knew, all he needed was just a hint about the person who was behind this

master plan. He put everything back to its place and exited his Master's room. He went back to his room and found Calla sleeping peacefully. She was looking so cute. Then his eyes fell on the big bruises on her small figure. He clenched his fists at the site. He exited the room and went to the kitchen. He quickly took some ice from the fridge and packed it up in a zipper bag. Once done he quickly went back to his room.

He sat beside sleeping Calla and pulled her in his lap. He lightly started applying ice over the bruised areas of her body. She jumped in his lap as the cold ice touched her soft skin. She opened her eyes, panic visible on her face. Her eyes met with the ocean blue eyes and she released the sigh of relief. She relaxed in his arms and he kept applying ice over her bruises. She could see an uneasiness in his eyes. He was sad and she knew he was worried about the bruises she had. She cupped his face in her small hands. She didn't know how to make him feel better. She wrapped her arms around his neck and pulled him close. He put the ice bag on the bed side table. "I'm fine Ethan." She whispered in his ear softly. He wrapped one of his arms around her waist pulling her even closer to his chest and with the other, he started rubbing her back. He kissed her cheek and she giggled.

"I'm so sorry I didn't mean to hurt you. All I want is you to be ready to fight and protect yourself." He whispered back.

"Shhhh... I know. You will never hurt me, ever." She replied confidently.

"You trust me this much?" Ethan asked.

She broke the hug and looked into his ocean blue eyes. She saw hurt in his eyes. She cupped his face with one hand and caressed his cheek with her soft thumb. "I trust you with my life Ethan. I know I have said so many things before but that was a misunderstanding. I trust you. I will always trust you." She explained. A year escaped his eye as he heard her. She wiped that tear with her soft fingers and gave him a sweet strawberry smile. He pulled her to his hard chest again and held her tightly like his life depended on her.

CHAPTER 22

Calla was sitting in the meeting room with Sidney. Ethan had allowed her to work. She was now living in her own house. Calla started to live her normal life during the day time. And in the evening, she helps Ethan to find the witches behind those spells. Calla was sitting in the meeting room but her mind was elsewhere. She and Ethan were closer. They weren't dating officially, but they were a couple. Calla was happy with him. He was caring and possessive. And she always liked it. The boring meeting was eating her alive. She was stealing glances of the wall clock. She couldn't wait any longer. She wanted to see him, hug him and tell him everything that had happened to her the whole day. She smiled at the thought of him kissing her in the kitchen. Sidney was sitting beside her. She noticed Calla was smiling over nothing. But she didn't bother to ask her or disturb her. Sidney was happy seeing her best friend happy. Ethan was perfect for Calla. Knowing that he is the only person in this world after Xavier who can make her smile whenever she is sad. Sidney always had wished a caring and loving person like Ethan for Calla.

Calla started swinging her chair, she was paying attention towards the meeting as well but it wasn't easy anymore. Ethan is always in her head, making her smile. Calla sighed in relief when the presentation was over. It was 6 in the evening. She knew she would find Ethan at her place. She quickly went to her office, packed her stuff and went to her car. She hopped in the car and quickly drove off.

She reached home after an hour drive. She stepped out of the car and fished out the door keys from her bag. She went to the door to unlock it but it was already unlocked. She smiled, she knew he would be at her place waiting for her after his work. She stepped into the house and locked the door behind. She could hear some sounds coming from the living room, (he must be watching the TV.) She thought as she made her way to the living room.

"Hello Calla, did you miss me babe?" She heard those words from behind and she froze on her place. She couldn't believe he would ever dare to come back here. But she was wrong, he was here. Henry was here.

"Why are you here?" Calla asked. She was angry but she controlled herself.

"Oh come on baby. You thought a slap and a few curses would end our relationship, well I don't think so. I'm here to get us back together." Henry said with a grin on his face.

"We have nothing to be together anymore Henry. Get out of my house before I kick you out." Calla threatened him. She turned around to leave but Henry held her shoulder tightly. She grabbed his wrist, twisted his arm behind his back and kneed his stomach hard.

"Aaaahhhh..." Henry growled in pain and knelt on the ground.

"That's what happens when you try being a jerk around a lady. Next time, keep your hands off of me or I won't be gentle like I was a moment ago." Calla said and turned around to leave. She took a few steps ahead and heard someone gagging. She turned around to look and found Henry in the air. Ethan was holding him high by his neck.

"You dare to even think about hurting her, you pig." Ethan growled and threw Henry. He flew back and hit the wall. He landed on the ground with a loud thud.

"Ethan stop." Calla yelled and Ethan looked at her. His eyes were red with rage but he controlled himself. He knelt down on the ground beside Henry and grabbed the collar of his shirt.

"If I were you, I would stay far far away from her. This was the last time I am seeing you here and you are leaving alive, but if I see you around her ever again, then she won't be able to save you. Now get out." Ethan growled at Henry. Henry quickly stood up and ran out of the house. Ethan went to Calla and cupped her face. "Are you okay love?" He asked in a worried tone. Calla smiled and kissed his palm.

"I'm fine Ethan, don't worry." She assured him. "Now tell me what took you so long to be here. I thought you said you would be here by 6." Calla added.

"Yeah, about that. Get ready. We have to go somewhere." Ethan replied. She nodded and went upstairs to her room. She took a quick shower and changed into her casual jeans with a tank top and buttoned up shirt. She went downstairs and found Ethan in deep thoughts, he was looking out of the window. She walked towards him slowly and wrapped her arms around his waist from behind. Ethan inhaled deeply and pulled her in front of him. She leaned up to meet his height and captured his lips in a soft but long kiss.

"I missed you all day." She murmured in his mouth. He smiled hearing her confession. He pulled her even closer and deepened the kiss. After a minute or so he broke the kiss when she was out of breath. He kissed her forehead and pulled her for a loving hug.

"I missed you too, but right now we need to go." Ethan said. He didn't want that moment to be over. But he knew they would continue later. They needed to be at his friend's house, who was going to help him find those witches. Calla inhaled his masculine scent deeply and nodded her head.

"Okay, let's go then." Calla said. Ethan scooped her up in his arms and carried her bridal style. He stepped out of the house and started running towards the woods. In a few seconds he was standing in front of a cabin. It was made of wood and looked very old. But still it looked very beautiful.

"Where are we and why are we here?" Calla finally asked the question that was buzzing in her head.

"This is the cabin of an old friend of mine. He will help us to reach one of those witches." Ethan explained. The door swung open and a muscular man came out of the cabin.

"Ethan my friend, I was waiting for you. And you are the lovely Calla Davis. It's a pleasure to finally meet you. Buddy you are very lucky." That man said.

"Calla, meet Andrew Red. He is a good friend of mine and he and I share the same Master." Ethan introduced.

"Oh, nice to meet you Mr Red." Calla greeted him.

"The pleasure is all mine sire. Now let's go. We don't want to be late. We don't have much time left." Andrew said and led them both into the cabin. Calla looked around, his cabin was fully decorated with so many plants and flowers. He led them both into a creepy room. Calla grabbed Ethan's hand tightly. Ethan squeezed her hand a little with a smile. They stepped into the room and Calla gasped. Whole room was dark and only a few candles were lit. Ethan made her sit on one of the coaches in the room and he himself sat in one of the circles that was drawn on the ground. She knew they were performing a magic spell to find a way to get to one of those witches. Ethan and Andrew started reciting a spell together over and over again. Calla felt uneasiness as they started reciting the spell.

"Are you sure Andy this is the right spell?" Ethan asked as he felt the same uneasiness as Calla.

"Hahaha... no. It's not the right spell, for you both actually. You know Ethan Carter, you should have done that yourself. It's a binding spell, now you can't get out of this circle. Now I'm taking her and you both enjoy each other's company." Said the man who just entered the room. Ethan looked at Calla who was laying on the couch, unconscious.

CHAPTER 23

Calla looked around herself. A moment ago she was sitting on the couch and watching Ethan and his friend performing a spell. And the other moment, she was standing in the same forest she had seen so many times in her dreams. She was standing all alone. "Ethan." She screamed loudly. She was expecting Ethan to come and get her but she didn't know that he was trapped already. She looked at the sky and found the dark Moon. It was full but eclipsed. She gulped hard in fear.

"Calla." She heard an unknown voice from behind. She turned around and found a well dressed and sophisticated man standing.

"You look familiar. Aren't you Ethan's Master, Master Dalton?" Calla asked. A small smile appeared on his face and he nodded his head.

"I am not just his Master honey. I am your ancestor." Dalton replied in a loving tone. This was the first time he was seeing her in front of him and he was happy. He noticed her voice and even her accent was exactly like his Lilly. She looked exactly like his Lilly. Same eyes, same height, same face, same features and same beauty.

"Where am I? And why am I here in the first place?" Calla asked him.

"Honey, you are trapped inside your head." Dalton replied.

"I don't understand what you are saying?" Calla asked.

"The spell Andrew used, was given to him for this, to trap you like this." Dalton explained.

"Ethan will get me out." Calla replied.

"Unfortunately, he can't help you, my child. You have to rescue yourself and Ethan as well." Dalton replied.

"What do you mean? If it was a trap, couldn't Ethan see it before, like he always does?" Calla asked.

"Ethan can see the future because I gifted him my power. His power is to read minds." Dalton replied. "My child, they used Andrew to make it work because they knew Ethan couldn't be fooled. They want to trade you against Sophie but what they don't know is Riders never trade their Alpha at any cost." Dalton added.

"Who wants to trade me? Why don't you just tell us?" Calla asked in an angry tone.

"You will not understand my child, how much I want to help you? How much I want this all to be over. But I am bound, I am not allowed to tell you directly. But in an indirect way." Dalton replied.

"And that indirect way is?" Calla asked.

"Right now, you need to get out of here so you can help Ethan to get out of that trap. You're so strong by your blood." Dalton told Calla.

"But how?" Calla asked and looked around. The forest was getting even darker.

"Calla you are as strong as Ethan. You need to find your way out of here or there will be no way to save Sophie." Dalton replied. He then leaned down and whispered something in Calla's ear and started stepping backwards.

"Wait, you need to tell me what I have to do?" Calla yelled.

"Everything you need is inside you Calla and now you know what you have to do as you are out of here. Find your way out." Dalton said and Calla saw him vanishing in the fog. Calla started running in the same direction where Dalton vanished.

"You're running in the wrong direction." She gasped when she heard that voice again. She turned around to look at Xavier standing. She ran to him and wrapped her arms around him. "Calla he told you to find your way out of here, not to follow him." Xavier said.

"I don't know how to get out of here daddy. I'm lost." Calla said between her sobs.

"I know baby and I am so sorry. I should have listened to your mother. She told me to tell you everything about us, about you and your ancestors. But I was selfish, I didn't even tell you about Sophie. I am so sorry you have to go through all this because of me. But Calla, I'm glad Ethan gave you everything that you need, that I couldn't give you ever. He has told you everything. You have to sit down and remember everything he has told you and you will find a way out." Xavier said.

Calla nodded her head and Xavier pecked her forehead. "I know you can do it. Believe in yourself." He added and walked away. Calla took a deep breath to calm her nerves, she closed her eyes and remembered everything that had happened since she saw him at the beach party. She recalled every dream she had with him and all the memories he gave her back. Just then she remembered. Ethan had told her that her blood is very powerful and she can break any spell with a drop of her blood. She picked up a twig from the ground and pierced it at the tip of her finger. She sat on a huge rock beside her and squeezed her finger a little. A drop of her blood pooled out of the hole and dropped on the ground. She closed her eyes as her surroundings started glowing like the Moon actually landed on the surface of the Earth.

"Hahaha... no. It's not the right spell, for you both actually. You know Ethan Carter, you should have done that yourself. It's a binding spell, now you can't get out of this circle. Now I'm taking her and you both enjoy each other's company." Ethan heard his voice and he fumed in anger.

"What are you doing here?" Ethan asked the only person who could dare to confront Ethan. Brandon, his Master's second son. The one who changed his way after his father's death and his sister Camelia, she started supporting him for power.

"Come on brother. I thought you would be happy seeing me here. Cammie is outside, but she doesn't want to meet you." Brandon said in a dramatic sweet voice.

"Don't call me brother you traitor, why are you here?" Ethan yelled at him.

"I'm here to take her so I can trade her against that pure blooded vampire kid." Brandon explained.

"You think you can make a deal with the Storm Riders. They will eat you alive." Andrew replied.

"You know Andy I didn't ask you anything so you better shut up. Now you both enjoy your life here in these circles forever, I'm going to take her with me." Brandon said. And started laughing hysterically.

"Not so fast you dumbest thing." Calla said as she threw a crystal ball on his head. It collided with the back of his head and shredded into pieces. Brandon growled and turned around to face her.

"Not so smart human." Brandon said and lunged himself upon Calla. Calla fell on the couch and he pinned her. He pulled his handkerchief out of his pocket and spilled something on it from a small bottle.

"You are going to sleep so we can take you." He said. Calla scratched his cheek and he opened his mouth. Just then put her wounded finger on his tongue and a drop of her blood slid down his throat. She then kneed his stomach as hard as she could and he fell on the ground with a loud thud. Calla got up and kicked his stomach again. He screamed loudly in pain. Calla walked towards Ethan, she took the knife Ethan had given her and made a small cut on her palm. Blood pooled out of her palm and she let it drip on the circular boundaries that were caging both Ethan and Andrew inside. Her blood broke the spell and Ethan got free. She repeated everything again on the other circle to free Andrew as well. Ethan grabbed her hand, fished out his handkerchief from his pocket and wrapped it around her hand.

"You little human dared to..." Brandon couldn't complete his sentence as he saw both Ethan and Andrew fuming in anger.

"You dare to even think of hurting her, she's mine." Ethan growled at Brandon. Calla smiled at his possessive clam.

"You sick psycho, you dare to use me to get my Master's blood." This was Andrew who growled loudly. Both vampires were about to lunge at Brandon and Calla yelled.

"Stop..." they both turned around to look at Calla who was grinning mischievously.

"He and his sister know everything about the person who killed Sophie's parents and are searching for her and stalking me." Calla said and both Andrew and Ethan looked at each other and back to her.

"What? I am their blood, I can know things, can't I Grandpa Brady?" Calla asked Brandon and he gulped hard when he heard the pet name his father only used for him.

"How do you know that name?" Brandon asked with horror visible on his face.

"I think I know a lot about both you and your baby sister Cammie, or I should call her Grandma Cammie." Calla replied with a smirk on her face.

"His sister is outside, we need to get her too and get out of here, people are coming here to kill you both and get me. We need to hurry. I'll tell you everything Ethan." Calla said to Ethan

"I trust you Calla, don't worry." Ethan reassured her with a sexy smirk and turned to face Brandon.

CHAPTER 24

Ethan turned to face Brandon with a smirk on his face. Ethan punched Brandon and he fainted. "What a waste." Ethan said and went out of the house. Andrew threw Brandon over his shoulder and he also started walking towards the door, Calla followed him behind. As they exited the house they saw Camelia fighting Ethan. Andrew tossed Brandon into his truck and pulled out a small pouch from his truck. He fished out a small green bottle from that pouch. Andrew growled and Ethan knelt down on the ground. Andrew threw the small bottle on Camelia. As the bottle shredded, Calla saw green clouds around Camelia. She coughed for a few times then fell on the ground and fainted. Ethan and Andrew fist bumped each other over their success.

"We need to leave before we get caught." Calla said.

"We can't go to your house, neither of our houses. We need to take them somewhere else." Ethan said.

"But where?" Andrew asked.

"There is only one place in this world that is safe for us when it comes to Brandon and Camelia. We have to go to Ashley. He's the only one who can control them both and hide them." Ethan explained.

"Then get in, we need to go." Andrew said. Ethan and Calla both hopped into the truck, Andrew started the engine and drove off. A yawn escaped Calla's lips and Ethan chuckled.

"Are you tired?" Ethan asked and Calla nodded her head. "Okay, close your eyes. I'll wake you up when we'll reach Ashley's castle." Ethan said and pecked her forehead.

"Castle?" Calla asked Ethan with widened eyes.

"Yes castle." Ethan replied with a wink.

"Ashley isn't like these two Calla. He is very strong and he has his own kingdom. We are going there. You'll see how Royal your ancestors are actually." Andrew replied with a grin on his face.

"I can't wait to see it then." Calla said and leaned her head over Ethan's shoulder. He quickly wrapped one of his arms around her and pulled her close. She inhaled his masculine scent deeply and drifted off.

Calla opened her eyes again and found herself in Ethan's arms. He carried her bridal style and was walking. "You can sleep Calla." Ethan said as he noticed her waking up. She wrapped her arms around his neck and snuggled even closer to him. Ethan chuckled and kept walking. He laid her

down on a comfy bed and covered her body with the comforter. He pecked her forehead and was about to leave her when she grabbed his wrist and pulled him closer.

"You don't want me to leave?" Ethan asked and Calla just nodded her head. Ethan laid beside her and pulled her closer. She quickly wrapped her arms around his waist and inhaled his masculine scent deeply. It wasn't long when she was in her dream land.

"Master, your friend Master Ethan is here with Andrew." Bruce, Ashley's turned vampire came into Ashley's room and informed his master about his visitors.

"Ethan is here? He didn't tell me about his visit." Ashley said with frownd brows.

"They are not here alone Master. They brought your siblings as well. And I saw a very pretty lady with them too. Master Ethan was holding her like she's someone so precious or fragile like a flower." Bruce explained to his Master.

"Ethan, with a girl. That's something impossible Bruce. Let me see what brought them both here together and that too with my evil siblings?" Ashley said as he got up from the couch and went to the door. He exited the room with Bruce right behind him. Bruce told him Where his guests were and left. Ashley reached in front of the room that was always used by Ethan whenever he visited Ashley's territory. Ashley knocked at the door and waited for Ethan to reply.

"Come in Ash, since when you needed my permission to enter my room." Ethan said it all in one breath as the scent of his most dear friend and his Master's first born, hit his nostrils.

"I was informed that you brought a lady here. I thought it's better to knock. Maybe you are busy with your precious little human you brought here. I don't remember you with any woman in the five hundred and twenty years we have spent together my friend." Ashley explained.

"You'll keep talking like that, aren't you going to welcome me like you always do." Ethan complained and opened his arms wide for his friend. Ashley walked towards him and pulled him in a brother hug. They both patted each other's backs.

"It has been so long since I saw you last time." Ashley said.

"I know, I was occupied with something very important." Ethan replied.

"Is this mortal the one who kept you occupied for the last 26 years my friend?" Ashley asked.

"Yes, and don't call her little human or mortal. She has a name." Ethan replied.

"What's her name then? I can see she is very precious to you." Ashley asked.

"Calla, her name is Calla. And yes, she is precious. She's my everything." Ethan replied.

"Why does she smell so familiar to me?" Ashley asked with frowned brows.

"Why wouldn't she? Your blood is running through her veins." Ethan replied and Ashley became more confused.

"What do you mean by my blood in her veins?" Ashley asked.

"Come and see for yourself, what did I mean." Ethan said and guided his friend towards the bed where Calla was sleeping peacefully. Ashley looked at her and his eyes widened in shock. It was like he was looking at his dead mother.

"Who is she Ethan?" Ashley asked.

"She's Sophie's child, the one I was bound with by Master Dalton." Ethan replied.

"She is exactly like our mother." Ashley said with teary eyes.

"She is, not just by looks but by her heart, soul and bravery as well." Ethan replied in a proud tone.

"Why didn't you tell me about her?" Ashley complained.

"Believe me brother it wanted to tell you but she never let me." Ethan said in a teasing tone.

"What does that suppose to mean?" Ashley asked with a raised brow.

"I had to keep my eyes on her every single second. Because she always gets herself in trouble and needs my help to get her out of it." Ethan replied and started laughing hysterically.

"Don't you get started over her okay. That was a long time ago." Ashley replied in an annoyed tone and scratched the back of his head.

"I am not getting started brother. I am just telling you that she is nothing less like you. Do you know, she had made Brandon fall on his knees today." Ethan said with a loud chuckle when he remembered how Calla kicked Brandon in his stomach.

"She, a human, made Brandon fall on his knees. I don't believe you." Ashley said, not believing Ethan's words.

"Trust me brother, she fought him like a hawk. Brandon was laying on the ground in no time." Ethan explained.

"He attacked her?" Ashley asked in a serious tone.

Ethan sighed and forced a smile on his face. "Yeah he did. In fact she is the one who got us out. I have no idea how he trapped us? I mean, Andrew getting trapped in something like that baby spell is understandable, but I don't understand how I could get trapped inside?" Ethan replied with a frown on his forehead.

"Oh my God, it's happening to him. She is in love with him." Ashley thought with a horrified look on his face.

CHAPTER 25

Calla opened her eyes and stretched her arms above her head. A yawn escaped her lips, she stood up and went to the bathroom. She peeled off her clothes and hopped into the shower. She washed her body, brushed her teeth and stepped out of the bathroom. A towel wrapped around her small figure, she stepped into the closet to find something to wear. The closet was filled with Ethan's clothes, nothing for her to wear. She pulled out his t-shirt and jeans and wore them. She dried her hair and stepped out of the closet. Ethan came into the room and looked at Calla who was looking so hot in his clothes. He growled and Calla looked at him with a smile. Ethan took a deep breath and went to her. She was sitting on a couch and was wearing her boots. "You are going to kill me one day, Calla." Ethan said and pulled her close to him.

"Now what have I done?" Calla asked with a cute frown on her beautiful face.

"Nothing, you look beautiful." Ethan replied and rubbed the tip of his nose with her cheeks. Her cheeks turned pink and she narrowed her eyes. He pinched her chin lightly and guided her lips towards his. He captured her lips in a soft kiss. She wrapped one of her hands around his neck and the other one was on his bicep. He encircled one arm around her waist and the other one was entangled with her silky blonde hair. Ethan broke the kiss when he felt her out of breath. Breathing heavily, she kissed his cheek and her stomach growled loudly. She looked at him with her eyes widened. Ethan tried so hard to control himself but he wasn't able to control his laughter. He started laughing hysterically and she punched his shoulder.

"You're so mean you know." Calla said as she huffed in anger. Ethan wiped the tears from his eyes and pulled her to his chest.

"I'm sorry okay. I can't help it, your stomach makes me laugh so hard that my stomach hurts." Ethan said and started laughing again. Calla glared at him and stood up.

"Where are you going?" Ethan asked. Calla glared at him again and Ethan bit his tongue. He knew she was now very angry at him and there is no way he could win against her when it comes to her angry mood. Ethan also stood up and opened the door for her. They both stepped out of the room and went to the dining hall. Ashley was already seated and was having his breakfast when Calla stepped into the dining hall with Ethan following her behind. Ashley looked at Ethan, who was nervously following Calla behind. Ashley's fork dropped on the table, he held his stomach tightly and started laughing hysterically. Calla looked at him and then at Ethan who had a guilty smile on his face. He glared at Ashley like he would eat his friend alive. Seeing his nervousness, Ashley's laughter became louder.

"Stop it mate, you're not doing any good for my bad situation." Ethan said nervously.

Ashley sat straight on his chair again and downed a glass of juice in one go. "I am so sorry but this is a very rare scene that I had witnessed today. Ethan being nervous and following a woman." Ashley said between his laughter fits.

"Thanks for embarrassing me in front of her, Ashley." Ethan said and Calla's eyes widened as she heard the name.

"Ashley?" Calla asked in confusion.

"Oh, sorry. Calla meet your grandfather, Ashley. And Ashley already knows you." Ethan introduced.

"Wait, he is my grandfather, but how?" Calla asked.

"Your mother was my child, my blood. That's how I am your grandfather." Ashley replied to his granddaughter. Calla looked at Ethan with a questioning look on her face, Ethan nodded his head as he understood her unasked question.

Ethan went to his place with Andrew, to find out about the people who Calla said were coming to get them. Calla was sitting on a bench in the huge garden in Ashley's castle. She was looking at the sun set when Ashley came to her and sat beside her. She looked at him and smiled. Ashley smiled back as he remembered the beautiful smile of his mother.

"Don't you want to ask questions about me, about your mother, about our family?" Ashley asked.

Calla shook her head with a smile. "No, Ethan had answered all my questions already." She replied.

"When, he left right after breakfast. So when did he reply to your questions?" Ashley asked.

"Right in front of you. When I looked at him and he nodded, he answered all my questions." Calla replied confidently.

"So you trust him this much?" Ashley asked with a raised brow.

"Yes, I trust him." She said with a smile on her face. Ashley nodded his head and looked at the colorful sky.

"But there are a few things you need to know about our family. Something even Ethan doesn't know." Ashley said with a sad face.

"What is it? What made you sad all of the sudden?" Calla asked in a worried tone.

"Have you noticed anything unusual about Ethan ever since you have met him?" He asked.

"What do you mean?" Calla asked back.

"Have you noticed anything unusual or unexpected about Ethan or his behavior?" Ashley elaborated his question.

"Yesterday, when he was trapped inside that circle. And your brother tricked him with a spell. I thought Ethan is an expert in these things, like magic and spells and all. But I guess I was wrong." Calla told Ashley everything.

"No you weren't wrong my child. He was an expert but won't be any longer." Ashley replied in a serious tone.

"What do you mean by, won't be any longer?" Calla asked.

"Calla, I am so sorry my child you have to go through this because of me. All the pain and miseries in your life are because of me. I am the reason behind this all." Ashley replied and tears started flowing freely from his golden eyes.

"What do you mean? Tell me everything, please." Calla asked in curiosity.

"Calla, don't hate me for this my child, but it was a mistake I had made a long time ago and everyone who shares my blood, pays for my mistakes. Your father, your mother, your sister and Xavier. They all died because of me. I can't say anything about Sophie but now Ethan is in the line." Ashley replied.

"Tell me everything, please Grandpa." Calla asked with pleading eyes.

"Calla, I had hurt a witch when I was young. She cursed me and my blood and committed suicide right after that. Since then, my blood has been cursed." Ashley replied.

"What is this curse and how did my family die because of you?" Calla asked.

"She cursed me and anyone, who will share my blood. Whoever will love us as family, will die and our partners, they will suffer worse than our families. You see your grandmother had died too because of this curse. Then your father, then your mother, then Mara and Xavier." Ashley explained. Calla was staring at him with wide eyes. She couldn't believe that it was a stupid curse that took everyone's life. Tears started flowing down on her face and Calla sobbed quietly.

"And what do you mean by Ethan is in the line?" Calla asked.

"You and Ethan are in love with each other. I can see that clearly. His powers are fading away, Calla. Soon he'll be nothing but a mortal like you. And I'm not sure if he'll live or not." Ashley explained.

"If that's the case then I'll leave him. I can do anything for him, I can do anything to protect him." Calla said confidently.

"That ain't going to help him anymore Calla. The time you kissed him because of your feelings for him, that was the moment when that curse actually reached him as well. Now even if you leave him, still you can't save him." Ashley replied. Calla clapped both of her hands over her mouth, she stood up and ran back into the castle. Calla went back to Ethan's room and locked the door. She laid on the bed and started crying.

chapter 26

Ethan and Andrew came back to Ashley's territory at night. They searched for the stalkers all day, they found a few newly turned vampires but they couldn't get to the person behind this all. Ethan tried to open the door of his bedroom but it was locked. He fished out the room keys from his pocket and unlocked the door. He stepped into the room and found Calla sleeping. Her eyes were puffy and her cheeks had dried tear marks. Ethan quickly sat beside her and stroked her cheek lightly with the back of his fingers. She slowly opened her eyes and found Ethan looking at her with a small smile on his face. He looked tired and Calla didn't want him to worry about her. She sat up on the bed and forced a smile on her face for him. "Why were you sleeping at this time?" Ethan asked.

"Nothing, I was just tired so I thought it's better to take a nap." Calla replied casually.

"Really and what about these tear marks? Ethan asked.

"Oh, that's nothing. I was missing Sophie." Calla lied.

"Calla, I will find her. I promise." Ethan promised her and pulled her to his chest. He kissed the top of her head and rubbed her back.

"I know..." she whispered and inhaled his masculine scent deeply. He got up and went to the bathroom. He took a quick shower and they both went downstairs for dinner. Calla was extremely quiet and Ethan noticed that. She wasn't even eating her food but playing with it. Ethan knew something was wrong with her and she wasn't telling him anything.

"Calla, you aren't eating anything. Are you alright?" Ethan asked.

"Yeah, I'm fine I was just thinking about Sophie, that's all." Calla replied and forced a small smile on her face. Ethan didn't push her and nodded his head.

"Did they tell you anything Ashley?" Andrew asked.

"Nothing at all. They are zipped like they know nothing." Ashley replied.

"That's the thing. They all are zipped. We can't read their minds as well. They are all protected by the witches." Ethan said.

"What are you planning to do next?" Ashley asked.

"We are still considering our options." Andrew replied as Ethan told him to keep his mouth zipped in front of Calla. They finished their dinner and they all went to their rooms. As soon as Ethan and

Calla were inside the room, Ethan locked the door and caged Calla between his huge figure and the door. Calla gulped hard and her heart became wild in her ribcage.

"What's going on with you?" Ethan leaned in and whispered in her ear.

"Nothing." Calla whispered back.

"Liar..." Ethan whispered and nibbled her earlobe. She moaned softly. Ethan scooped her up in his arms and carried her to the bed. He laid her down carefully, then laid beside her. He pulled her close and she laid her head on his chest. He started rubbing her back soothingly and she snuggled closer to his chest. They both closed their eyes and drifted off.

Ethan woke up the next day before the sun rose. Calla was still sleeping. Her arms and legs were wrapped around him, keeping herself close to him. He pecked her forehead and placed his pillow in her arms. She quickly snuggled closer to his pillow and inhaled his scent. A smile appeared on her face and Ethan chuckled softly. He went to the bathroom and hopped into the shower. He stepped out of the bathroom after ten minutes, he wore his clothes and went to meet Ashley. Ethan stepped into Ashley's study. Ashley was sitting on a couch and was reading a book. Ashley looked up as Ethan stepped into the study and smiled. Ethan sat on the other couch that was placed into the study. "Aren't you up too early?" Ashley asked when he noticed Ethan's uneasiness.

"I always wake up around sunrise." Ethan replied in a serious tone. Ashley closed the book, put it aside and looked at Ethan.

"What is it, Ethan? You are talking to me like you don't know me." Ashley complained.

"You tell me what's going on Ash? I left a happy Calla here, I came back and found her sad." Ethan asked.

"Did she say anything to you about me?" Ashley asked back.

"No she didn't, now will you answer my question?" Ethan replied.

"Ethan, I know she is my granddaughter and I do love her like one. But you are my brother and I can't stand seeing you hurt. Calla isn't good for you." Ashley replied.

"What does that suppose to mean? What had you told her Ashley?" Ethan asked angrily.

"Everything about our family curse. You'll die if you stay with her any longer. And now it's already too late." Ashley reasoned.

"So what if I die? I don't care if I die being around her." Ethan yelled.

"You are being crazy Ethan. I think Sophie will survive if she is away from Calla or she'll end up dead too. Can't you see you are losing your powers, your strength. Since when Brandon and Cammie are able to defeat you. Since when you started getting trapped inside a tiny spell, since when people like Brandon and Cammie started tricking you Ethan? This is all because of her. I know it was my fault but I can't let you die like that. First her parents, then Mara and Xavier and now you. She killed them all and now it's your turn." Ashley replied angrily. They both heard a soft sob. They turned around and found Calla standing at the door. Her eyes were filled with tears. She took a few steps backwards and ran away.

"Calla stop." Ethan yelled but she didn't listen. Ethan ran after her. In a flash he was in front of Calla. He grabbed her by her hand and pulled her back into their bedroom and shut the door.

"Talk to me Calla." Ethan said in a pleading tone.

Calla looked at him and started hitting his chest. "You knew it all. You knew about all of their deaths but you told me nothing. You lied to me. Leave me alone, you are nothing but a liar. Stay away from me." Calla said between her sobs she kept hitting him.

Ethan pulled her closer and cupped her face. "Are you done? I didn't tell you all this rubbish because you have nothing to do with it. Calla, your father died because of your mother not because of you. Sophie, your mother died because she was diagnosed with cancer and that wasn't because of you. She was using some unhealthy spells to call her husband's soul. Some witches played with her and she thought she would be able to call her husband's soul. Xavier warned her so many times but she never listened to him and in the end she got cancer. And Mara and Xavier were murdered. You see, you have nothing to do with their deaths, in fact there were so many times when they were saved because of you." Ethan said

"Then what about you? You can't read anyone's mind, you can't fight the way you used to fight, you can't even recognize spells." Calla asked between her sobs.

"Maybe I am losing my powers, but believe me Calla I won't die. You are my hope, you are my life. You are the one who pulled me out of my dark times. Because of you I'm not the monster I used to be, because of you I am breathing. Calla you gave us life. Yes, Ashley's blood is coursed but he himself doesn't know that, the curse never reached you. I am not losing my powers because of you but because I broke a promise that I had made to my mother. Don't ask me now about that promise, but Calla, Master Dalton bound me with you for a reason. He knew what I would become after him. So he bound us both together and I am glad he did that. So what if I lose my powers? I will be a mortal like you then, we will turn old and grey together. We'll live together and we will die together. Now don't you dare blame yourself for all of this." Ethan explained to her and hugged her tightly. She also wrapped her arms around him tightly and sobbed quietly.

"I love you Ethan." Calla confessed and Ethan smiled.

"I love you too and I promise you I will get Sophie back home safely." Ethan confessed back.

chapter 27

Ashley opened his eyes when he heard a loud moan. He knew the voice belonged to his granddaughter, Calla. He rolled his eyes when he heard her again. A gruffy chuckle made its way to his ear and he quickly sat up on the bed. He then noticed that he wasn't in his room. He was at Ethan's place and the room was actually his father's room. He looked at the other side of the bed and found his father sitting on the bed, chuckling lightly. He rolled his eyes again seeing his father's teasing smirk. "Stop teasing me father." He said in an annoyed tone.

"What? I am not teasing you son. I am just enjoying this very cute moment." Dalton replied in a teasing tone.

"Yeah, I can see that." Ashley said.

"Are you jealous, son?" Dalton asked.

"I am not jealous, father but it isn't easy. She is my granddaughter for God's sake." Ashley replied to his father.

"So what? He is a very nice man. You should be thankful." Dalton said and started laughing.

"Yes, I am very thankful, dad. Now I know what Rebecca's father felt when he heard our moans." Dalton replied.

"Rebecca's father would have felt more anger than you are feeling right now. Don't you think?" Dalton said.

"Really father, you came here to give me hell." Ashley replied angrily.

"You shouldn't be angry, son. I promise you, she will be his queen." Dalton replied with a proud smile.

"I know father. He is a very good man. I am happy for them. At least she will be happy with the love of her life." Ashley said.

"You know, you still have a life. And Rebecca wasn't the end of the world. You still can have your happinesses." Dalton replied.

"Calla is safe but not me. I am still under the curse." Ashley replied in a sad tone.

"Are you sure, son? I can see you are free from it too." Dalton replied and patted his son's shoulder.

"Maybe, but I don't think I deserve it. I don't deserve happiness." Ashley said in a sad tone.

"I know son you made a mistake. You have learned your lesson and also have paid for your mistakes. Now it's time for you to live your happinesses too." Dalton said with a smile.

"I will think about it. So, is it true that he is losing his powers because he broke a promise?" Ashley asked.

"Yes, it is true. He made a promise to his mother. But he broke it." Dalton replied.

"What was that promise?" Ashley asked.

"I don't know. He never told me about it. But he told Lilly about the promise." Dalton replied.

"You know, if he is losing his powers and will be a mortal soon. Then he can't help Calla to find Sophie or her parents' murderer." Ashley said.

"I know, son. That's why you will help them to find Sophie." Dalton replied.

"But how? We still know nothing about it." Ashley asked.

"Time will tell you and teach you everything about your future. Don't worry son. You'll know everything when the time is right." Dalton replied. He then stood up and left. Ashley smiled and laid back on the bed.

Ethan laid beside Calla, both were panting. Ethan covered her naked body with the comforter as she was very exhausted with sexual intercourses they had in a few hours. Ethan couldn't have enough of her, he couldn't stop himself. And she didn't stop him either. It was her first time and she was more than happy that Ethan was her first. He kissed her cheek and pulled her close to him. He wrapped his arms around her and she did the same. Ethan was happy for the first time in his life. His life was in his arms, laying with him. "Are you alright?" He asked as he knew it was her first time and she could be feeling pain.

"I will be okay, Ethan. Don't worry too much about me." Calla replied with a smile.

"You can't tell me not to worry about you, it's something I love to do." Ethan replied and kissed the top of her head.

"I know." Calla whispered and her cheeks turned pink. Ethan chuckled softly when he saw her blushing.

"So what was that promise? You can tell me now." Calla asked.

"I have to tell you, is it necessary?" Ethan asked and Calla nodded her head. He sighed and forced a small smile on his face.

"My mother hated Humans. She was betrayed by humans so many times. She almost died the last time she tried to help a human. That day she promised herself not to help humans. I had a few human friends when I was a kid. She tried to stop me but I never listened to her. Then lastly, she forced me to promise her that I would never make any human friends again, nor I would find a mortal soulmate or I will lose all my powers. She made me promise to her and bound me with that promise." Ethan told her the truth.

"So it is because of me? I am the reason you are losing your powers." Calla asked.

"No, my mother is the reason I am losing my powers, not you. Don't blame yourself. And as I said, I will be happy to lose it if you are by my side." Ethan replied and captured her lips in a soft kiss.

"Thank you Ethan." Calla said after they broke the kiss.

"For what?" Ethan asked and chuckled.

"For everything you have done for me. For taking care of me. For cooing me when I used to cry. For completing my homework. For punishing my teachers whenever they punished me. For keeping me safe. For saving my life uncountable times. For making me laugh. For being a shadow for me every day and night. For reading bedtime stories for me when I was a kid. For singing me lullabies. For loving me. Thank you for being with me." Calla said.

"You don't have to thank me for all this. You have done more for me." Ethan replied and pecked her knuckle.

"So now what?" Calla asked.

"Now we will find your sister's and Xavier's murderer then we will find Sophie. Then we will take her back home safely. Then we will get married and raise Sophie like our own child." Ethan replied.

"Really, we can do that." Calla asked.

"Of course we will do that. And you are going to help me find her." Ethan replied.

"And where will we live? At your place or at mine?" Calla asked.

"Of course at my place." Ethan replied.

"Okay, then I will be decorating it as I want." Calla said and Ethan chuckled.

"You can do whatever you want. Now I can't wait to meet Sophie. I don't know if she will like me or not." Ethan asked nervously.

"She already likes you Ethan, don't worry about it." Calla assured him.

"And how do you know that?" Ethan asked.

"You remember when I saw you in that shop. I told her not to move as I wanted to talk to you. She called you my prince." Calla replied.

"I have heard that but, that doesn't mean she will accept me." Ethan said.

"She will love you Ethan. I promise." Calla said and kissed his cheek.

"I can't wait to find out." Ethan said.

"Good night Ethan." Calla said and snuggled closer to him.

"Good night my love." Ethan replied. They both closed their eyes and drifted off.

CHAPTER 28

Calla was sitting in her office. She again started her job. She knew Sidney would never call her but she also knew Sidney could not handle the whole business on her own. Ashley promised Ethan and Calla that he would help them and will do anything in his power to find out who killed Mara and Xavier and who is Sophie's stalker. Ashley had sent a few of his best vampires in different towns to find out for whom his siblings were working? Though Ethan knew until they found the stalker, Calla wasn't safe. Calla was trying hard to concentrate on her work but it was getting harder day by day. Ethan was sitting on one of the couches in Calla's office, staring at her. She was trying hard to avoid him and keep herself focused on her work but Ethan staring at her wasn't helping. A smile reached his red lips when he remembered their alone time together. Everything had changed between them since that night. They were back to their town. Ashley came with them along with Andrew and a few vampires. They were all helping Calla and Ethan. Ethan was told only to stay with Calla and to keep her safe. Calla sighed and stood up from her chair. "That's it, I can't work like this." Calla said.

"Why? What happened?" Ethan asked in confusion.

"Like you know nothing about what happened." Calla answered him sarcastically.

"Tell me what is it?" Ethan asked her again.

"I can't focus on my work with you staring at me all the time, from head to toe. Like you would jump on me anytime." Calla said it all in one breath. Ethan chuckled and rubbed the back of his neck with his hand nervously.

"I'm sorry, I didn't realize I was affecting you like this. You can sit here and work. I promise I won't be staring at you like that. You can work here." Ethan said in a guilty tone.

"You better not. If you do that again, I swear Ethan I will go to Sid's office and send her here to sit with you." She threatened him.

"Alright, alright. I won't, I promise. Jesus! Calla, I never knew you could be that dangerous." Ethan replied. Calla grinned mischievously over her win. She knew he could never win from her in any kind of argument. Calla went back to her seat and sat down. She started doing her work again. A few hours later, Sidney peeked through the door and giggled, seeing Ethan looking everywhere but at Calla. She could smell nervousness that was emitting from his body.

"Are you guys planning to stay here all night? It's been way past work hours." Sidney said.

"Let me just finish this one thing I am working on. Then we will leave. You go, don't worry about me. Ethan is here with me." Calla replied.

"Oh... I didn't realize you guys are waiting for me to leave so you both could have some fun together in the office. That's so hot Calla. I will tell Drew about this office fun. He'll be excited to do it." Sidney said it in a teasing tone.

"Shut up Sid, I'm working and Ethan is here for my protection only, not for Office Fun." Calla replied in an annoyed tone.

"Keep saying that." Sidney said and left them alone. Calla stretched her arms above her head and started working again. After 20 minutes, she was done with her work. She looked at Ethan who was playing with a ball and smiled.

"Your torture is over. We can go now." Calla said and stood up from her seat. Ethan also stood up and stretched his muscles. Calla gulped hard and lowered her gaze. Ethan chuckled seeing her pink cheeks.

"You can't even resist me stretching my muscles, can you?" Ethan said and wrapped one of his arms around her waist. He pulled her close and kissed the top of her head. He then grabbed her hand and pulled her out of the office building. He took her to a park. They walked together, hand in hand. They didn't speak a single word but kept walking. Enjoying each other's company with the chilly weather of October. She couldn't believe it was October now. She had been living without Sophie for six months. Chilly wind hit Calla's body and she shivered. Ethan wrapped his arm around her and pulled her close to himself. She welcomed his warmth and smiled. In these six months her life had changed fully. Never in her dreams she had thought about being with someone like Ethan who would treat her like a precious and expensive diamond. She wrapped her arms around him as well. She was happy with her life and she couldn't wait to get Sophie back home as well.

They stepped into Ethan's home and Andrew came running. "Thank God you both are fine." He said to them. "Master, they are home." He called Ashley. Ashley heard Andrew and came running to the door.

"What's going on?" Ethan asked.

"Nothing, where were you both?" Ashley asked.

"We went for a walk. You all are hiding something, what is it?" Calla asked her grandfather.

"Your friend Sidney called us an hour ago. She said you both were at the office. She went back to get something she forgot in her office. She found the whole building on fire." Ashley explained.

"What? But how is it possible?" Calla asked.

"I guess that happened right after you both left." Andrew replied.

"What about the creature?" Ethan asked.

"She's fine, she was standing outside and called us. She said whoever did it, they thought you both were still in there." Ashley replied.

"No matter how hard you will try, you can't save her. Calla has to die one way or another. They will find her, end her mercilessly, then they will find Sophie to marry her." Brandon spoke from the basement where he and Cammie were locked. Ethan heard him and his anger rose. He was about to run to the basement and beat Brandon till he lost consciousness, Calla grabbed his elbow and stopped him. She pulled him towards Dalton's bedroom and locked the door from the inside. She then turned to Ethan with a grin on her face, like she had won her first battle.

"Why are you smiling like you know something?" Ethan asked.

"Keep your voice down and yes I think I know something." Calla whispered.

"What is it?" Ethan whispered back.

"You remember when Brandon caged you and Andrew into that stupid spell and I told you that I saw your Master and he helped me to get out of that trap." Calla whispered in his ear.

"Yeah, so?" Ethan asked.

"So, because of Brandon, I just remembered what your Master had told me. Your Master told me that whoever is searching for Sophie, is behind the Braxton's murder as well. I don't know how I had forgotten this all. But as Brandon said they will kill me and take Sophie to marry her, with that I remembered what your Master had told me. Ethan, if we want to find out who was stalking Sophie and who murdered Mara and daddy, then we have to go to Braxton's territory." Calla explained.

"What Master had told you exactly?" Ethan asked.

"He said, you want answers, then go to Braxton's territory. Their new Master is someone Braxton never wanted to take his place. He also told me that Brandon and Cammie are working with him. Not working with actually, working under him. Ethan, I think we have to go there. You remember, you told me every time you followed the clues, you ended up at the same highway where Mara and daddy died. What if, that's what we're missing? Because you told me yourself that they were coming back from the funeral of their Master and were murdered." Calla said

"You're right. I didn't think of it this way. It was in front of me all the time but I didn't pay attention to it. Pack your bags Calla, we are going to Pennsylvania, to Braxton's territory." Ethan said.

CHAPTER 29

Ethan stopped the truck by a hotel. Calla and Ethan, both hopped out of the truck. Ethan grabbed both of their luggage and they both made their way into the hotel. Ethan booked them a room and then pulled Calla towards their room. Calla opened the door and they both stepped into the room. Calla laid down on the bed with her feet still on the ground. Ethan put the luggage into the closet. He then walked back to the room and sat beside Calla. He ran his fingers through his hair and turned to look at Calla. "Are you asleep, Calla?" He asked. Calla shook her head but didn't open her eyes.

"Tell me you still have the pendant, Sophie gave you. Last time you forgot to wear it and Brandon almost traded you away." Ethan asked. Calla didn't answer him but pulled the pendant out of her shirt and held it high to show it to Ethan.

"Are you okay?" Ethan asked in a worried tone. This time Calla opened her eyes and smiled at the concerned look on his face. She sat up on the bed and kissed his cheek.

"I'm fine Ethan, I'm just tired that's why I thought it would be better to lay down for a while." Calla replied.

"Okay." He replied. "Why don't you go and get a warm bath. It will help and you will feel better." He suggested.

"Okay, that's a good idea." She said and stood up from the bed.

"While you will be enjoying your bath, I'll get us something to eat." Ethan informed her and she nodded. She stepped into the bathroom and Ethan went out of the room to get dinner. Calla filled the tub with warm water and added soap and lavender fragrance. She peeled off her clothes and sat into the tub slowly. Warmth of the water soothed her aching back and tensed muscles. She laid into the bathtub and enjoyed her bath. She washed her hair and body.

She stepped out of the water and wrapped a towel around her waist. She felt someone's presence in the room. A smirk made its way to her pink lips as an idea popped up into her mind. Calla quickly wrapped another towel on her head and silently stepped out of the bathroom. She looked around but found nothing. She knew Ethan had told her he would get something for them to eat. She heard some noises like someone was going through the luggage Ethan had left into the closet. She quickly wore her bathrobe and went to the closet.

She found a man in the closet and she was right, he was going through her bags. Her scent reached to his nostrils and he stood up straight. He smirked, knowing she could not fight him. He turned

around and looked straight in her eyes. He stared at her eyes for a few seconds. He took a few steps closer to her.

"Where is it? Tell me, where did they leave it?" He asked her.

"What are you looking for?" Calla asked back.

"Answer my question, mortal or you will regret it." He threatened her and she decided to play along. She understood that he was asking for something that could lead them to that mysterious person Calla and Ethan were looking for.

"I don't understand you." She said.

"Where is the ring Braxton had given to Xavier? He wasn't wearing it when he was at the funeral. Where did he leave it before he came here?" He asked her.

"I don't know which ring you are talking about?" Calla replied. Xavier used to wear 3 rings in his left hand. She wanted to be sure which ring that man was talking about.

"Don't play games with me mortal or I will kill you, here and now." He threatened her again.

"I am not playing any games, I don't know anything about the ring you are asking me." Calla replied and started sobbing.

"I am talking about the golden ring with Ruby on it. The ring of the Master. Where is it?" He asked her again.

"When he had visited Pennsylvania, he was wearing it. I hadn't seen it after that." She said.

"Then why Draco is still looking for it, maybe he's wasting my time." He mumbled in his breath but Calla heard every word clearly because he was standing right next to her. "Look at me." He yelled and she did as he had asked her. He again looked straight in her eyes.

"You will not remember me and the chat we had." He said and she slowly nodded her head. In the blink of an eye he zoomed out of the room. Calla grinned mischievously because she had fooled a vampire and he believed her. She went to the closet and wore her clothes. She stepped out of the closet and sat at the edge of the bed. She kept reciting the name and the information about the ring again and again.

Ethan came back with two bags in his hands and a bucket of fresh fruits. He sniffed the air and caught an unknown scent. "Draco, golden with Ruby, ring of the Master." Ethan heard Calla reciting again and again.

"What is it, Calla?" He asked her. Calla turned around and stood up from the bed.

"A man came in. He was looking for the ring of the master. And he mumbled a name, Draco. I think this Draco is looking for the ring." Calla said it all in one breath.

"Are you alright?" Ethan asked in a worried tone.

"I'm fine. He just asked me questions and tried to make me forget all about our conversation. Not so lucky." Calla replied with a grin.

"Draco, I think I know him. He is one of the turned vampires of Braxton. Braxton saved his life by turning him into a vampire when he was dying. But Braxton always thought that turning Draco was the biggest mistake of his life." Ethan explained to her.

"Why is that?" Calla asked.

"Because as far as I know, Draco is a power hungry vampire. He can do anything to get..." Ethan didn't complete his sentence but his eyes widened when he realized that his Master had given him a hint a long time ago.

"You mean Draco?" Calla asked an incomplete question.

"I am not sure, Calla. But he is the only one who could kill Braxton. And if he really killed him then he is the murderer of Mara and Xavier." Ethan explained.

"Wait, why would he kill Mara and daddy? They didn't have anything to do with power and all." Calla asked.

"You don't understand, Calla. If he is looking for the golden ring with Ruby, it means that he wants to become the Master. But Braxton had given it to Xavier. That means Braxton knew about Draco's plan and he nominated Xavier as the next Master of the territory." Ethan explained. A small sob escaped Calla's lips and Ethan's heart stung with pain. He quickly pulled her to his chest and wrapped his arms around her tightly.

"It's okay, Calla. Shhh... Don't cry. You know I can't see you crying." Ethan cooed her.

"I can't believe he killed them for a stupid ring and so called power." Calla replied. Her tears soaked his shirt.

"I have promised you that he will suffer. And I always keep my promises, Calla. We need to get to Draco. Now it all makes sense. He is the one behind it all that's why I wasn't able to track any of them." He said. Calla looked at him with a confused look on her face.

"He is famous because he has a hundred witches. They all do exactly as he orders them." Ethan explained.

"How do you know this all?" Calla asked.

"Don't forget I am a witch myself and my mother was the most powerful witch of her time. They are smart but they can't keep it hidden for any longer. The truth always makes its way out like water." Ethan said.

CHAPTER 30

"Calla..." Calla slowly opened her eyes when someone whispered in her ear. She looked around and found herself laying on the grass. She sat up and tried to remember how she had gotten here. She stood up from the ground, the weather was very foggy and everything around her was blurry.

"Hello..." Calla called out but got no response.

"Can anyone hear me?" Calla asked again and heard a chuckle in response. She turned around and found Dalton sitting on a rock by the river. He turned around to look at Calla and smiled. Calla stood there, her feet glued with the ground. Dalton chuckled and patted the space beside him on the rock.

"Come my child, sit with your great grandpa?" He asked her. She nodded her head and slowly made her way towards the river. She sat beside Dalton.

"I thought you would be visiting Ethan, not me. He was eagerly waiting." Calla replied in a sad tone. She knew Ethan was excited to meet his master again.

"Right now, I can't visit him, but hopefully some other day." Dalton replied with a smile.

"Is it because he is losing his powers? I know he'll be like me very soon." Calla asked.

"You can say that my child, it is because he is losing his powers. But you don't know what future holds, neither do I." Dalton replied.

"You know I can't see him like this." Calla said as a tear escaped her eye.

"I know dear, neither could I. But it's fate. We can't do anything to beat fate. Yes, but if we try changing it." Dalton replied.

"You mean, there is a way to change that too?" Calla asked excitedly.

"Maybe, maybe not. I don't know." Dalton replied.

"If you don't know then why did you say that?" Calla asked and huffed in anger.

"I said it because I know. This is life we all live. Until we are alive, we can do anything to change our lives. Once we are dead, then things become impossible. So tell me, are you alive or dead?" Dalton asked with a chuckle. Calla finally smiled hearing him.

"So you know the way but you can't tell me." Calla replied and Dalton laughed.

"You are getting smarter day by day. I can tell you or not, that's the discussion for some other day. Today, I'm here for something else." Dalton replied.

"What is it about?" Calla asked.

"Come on, follow me and I'll show you the path. You will find your answers there." Dalton replied. He stood up and offered his hand for Calla. Calla accepted his hand.

"Where are we going?" She asked as they started walking.

"There, where the Sun is rising from." He replied and pointed his finger towards the East. Calla watched the Sun starting to rise and the sky changing its colors. Dalton kept walking and Calla saw the end of the Cliff. Her heart skipped a beat when Dalton kept staring at the sun and kept walking.

"Do you trust me, Calla?" Dalton asked as he felt her palms getting sweaty. She looked at the sky and took a deep breath to calm her nerves.

"Yes, I do." She replied confidently as her nerves were calmed. Dalton nodded his head and kept walking. It was almost the end of the cliff. Calla's heart was beating wildly in her ribcage. But she didn't stop.

"It's okay if you want to close your eyes. But remember, you are the one who will be showing the way to others." Dalton replied. Calla shook her head and decided to keep her eyes open. Her first step in the air and she saw everything around her changed. It wasn't the cliff she was standing upon but a beautiful magical land. She couldn't believe her eyes, it was like a wonderland. A place she had heard stories about by Ethan. She was looking at the scenery in front of her eyes with her mouth agape.

"Isn't it beautiful?" Dalton whispered in her ear and she jumped.

"Yes, very." She replied as her eyes shone like stars.

"Don't fall for the lies in front of your eyes, Calla. What you are seeing is just what you imagine as the perfect wonderland. The image in your head is in front of you, nothing else." Dalton replied in a serious tone.

"So it's not real. Just an image I have in my mind?" Calla asked and Dalton nodded.

"Close your eyes, Calla. Close them tightly, then open them again in a flash, not slowly." Dalton replied. Calla closed her eyes tightly and opened them quickly. The breathtaking view was long gone. She saw a place darker than night.

"There it is, now you can see it as well. You have to bring Ethan here. This is the place where he hides. And I brought you here because you are the one who can remember it. The pendant you have Calla, it will keep all the spells away from you. Visiting Ethan would be nothing but a waste of

time, both his and mine. It isn't about him losing his powers." Dalton replied. He raised his hands and clapped.

Once.

Twice.

Thrice and they were back at the river. Calla looked at the sky, the sun was shining brightly in the sky.

"It's time for me to leave and you to wake up. I am leaving you with the answers. Remember Calla, all you need is right here in your heart. You just need to listen to your heart and it will show you the right way. Believe in yourself Calla. Ethan was not wrong when he said, "You are stronger than any of us." Dalton replied and patted her head. He turned around and started walking away. He didn't look back and in a minute, he vanished between the woods.

Calla felt a feather-like kiss on her forehead and she slowly opened her eyes. She smiled when she looked at Ethan, a sexy smile on his handsome face.

"Good morning." He greeted her and pecked her forehead again.

"Good morning." She greeted back and inhaled his masculine scent deeply.

"Did you sleep well?" He asked worriedly.

"As long as I am with you, I can sleep without any worries." She replied. He smiled hearing her response. He sat up on the bed and looked out of the window. Calla did the same and she realized, the sun hadn't risen fully. She looked at him and found him in his deep thoughts with a disappointed look on his face.

"What is it Ethan?" Calla asked him.

"Nothing to worry about." He replied and tried hard to hide the pain that was clear in his eyes.

"Is it because you were expecting your Master to visit you last night?" She asked and leaned her head over his shoulder. He wrapped his arm around her waist and pulled her closer. He didn't reply but nodded his head.

"There must be a reason behind it. You said yourself that your Master never did anything without a strong reason behind." Calla replied

"What could be the reason behind this? Not visiting me last night. We need answers." Ethan said in a sad tone. Calla leaned up and kissed him. He froze at first then kissed her back with the equal passion as hers. They broke the kiss and he smiled.

"Just what I wanted to see." Calla thought.

"He didn't visit you because he visited me last night. Now that our dreams are not connected for some reason, he could only visit one of us." Calla replied with a wide grin.

"What did he say to you?" Ethan asked.

"Everything we need." She said and she jumped on him. She pinned him on the bed and captured his lips in a long, loving and passionate kiss.

CHAPTER 31

"This is it. Your Master brought me here." Calla informed Ethan as they both reached the river. Calla remembered everything. Calla grabbed his hand and started pulling him towards the cliff, just like Dalton had done. Ethan didn't question her once and kept walking. He saw the end of the cliff. He looked at her but she didn't stop. She stepped upon the cloud and so did Ethan. In a flash, the whole scenery changed. Ethan looked around and found himself standing in his hometown. Calla squeezed his hand knowing the spell would be effecting him as it did to Calla the first time she visited.

"It's okay Ethan, it's just an illusion. Close your eyes tightly for a few seconds then open them again." Calla said and Ethan did as she told him. As he opened his eyes again he found himself standing into the dark forest. He took a deep breath and looked at Calla again.

"You didn't doubt me once. It was the end of the cliff?" Calla asked him with a shock visible on her face.

"Why would I? I know you and I trust you." Ethan said and kissed her cheek. Her cheeks turned pink and Ethan chuckled. They both started walking on the tracks they saw between the treeline of the dark forest.

Draco was sitting on his dining table enjoying his dinner along with his vampires. One newly turned vampire, Joey came running. He knelt on the ground and bowed his head in respect for his Master. "Now what J, you all ain't even let me eat in peace." Draco said in an annoyed tone.

"Forgive me, my Master, to disturb you again but this was urgent." Joey replied with his eyes still on the ground.

"What is it?" Draco asked.

"They are here Master. That woman along with that ancient vampire." Joey replied.

"Where?" Draco asked as he stood up from his chair.

"Into the woods my Lord. They just passed the barrier." Joey replied.

"You go back to your place. I know what I have to do next." Draco said and started climbing down the staircase of his castle. He opened the door of his basement and looked at all the witches still busy in their works. He passed through them all and went to the room into the end of the hallway. He opened the door and the witch inside bowed her head.

"What brought my Master to me? Tell me what I can do for my Master today?" The Witch asked.

"Celine, I want you to open your eyes. We have guests. I need to see them." Draco replied to the witch named Celine. The other older vampires came rushing in her room as well.

"Okay Master." Celine replied and went to the full size mirror in her room. She touched the tips of all of her fingers at the surface of the mirror and started reciting a spell. She recited the spell five times and stepped back. Draco came in front and looked into the mirror. His eyes widened and his heart started beating erratically when his eyes fell on the beauty that was walking through the dark woods. His eyes glowed brightly and a smirk made its way to his red lips.

"Now I understand why Xavier kept her hidden." Draco said to himself.

"What do you mean Master?" Celine asked.

"You can not understand. None of you can. She is something I have never seen in my life." Draco said as he felt his desires awakening. Never in his life he felt this way for any woman but her. She was pure beauty.

"What do you say Celine, if I took both of them? Niece and Aunt, both of them would be mine?" Draco asked the Witch.

"My Master, you need the pure blood vampire for your long life. But if you are asking me about her, I will say no. I know nothing about this one. Everything about her is cloudy. I haven't seen her before." Celine replied and Draco turned to look at her. In a flash, he grabbed her by her neck and slammed her against the wall. He tightened his hold around her neck and she choked.

"You dare to speak more than you were asked? Don't you know what I am capable of? Don't you know that I am your Master and I can do whatever I want?" Draco roared at her. Tears started flowing freely from her eyes as her lungs started to burn because of the lack of oxygen.

"I... s.submit m.m..master." she submitted and he smirked. He released her neck and she fell on the ground. She gasped loudly as the air reached to her lungs.

"What is so special about her sire, that made you punish Celine? If I may ask?" Peter, one of the older vampires, asked Draco once he was back in front of the mirror.

"You don't know Pete, you'll never know what I just saw. Ethan used to have the same monster inside him a long time ago, as the one inside me. In fact the one Ethan had was ten times stronger and horrible than mine and look now, he is calm and his monster is sleeping peacefully inside him. Or maybe dead by now, I don't know. Looks like only a monster can see what's so special about her. She is something else." Draco replied with his eyes still on the mirror.

"Forgive me Master, but challenging Ethan would not be easy." Peter replied.

"You can't see what I am seeing right now, Pete. Ethan isn't strong like he used to be. I can beat him in the blink of an eye. And will claim this angle. I am sure Ethan would not mind if I would take her in front of his dead body?" Draco asked and started laughing darkly.

Calla and Ethan stepped out of the forest. Ethan could sense something was wrong but he brushed off the thought. The doors of the dark castle were open, they both didn't waste any time and stepped in. They looked around and found no one. Calla frowned her brows because she was expecting people attacking them. "Something feels off with this place Ethan. I don't feel so good." Calla said and held Ethan's arm tightly.

"Of course love. Nothing could feel fine in my castle." An unknown voice they heard and turned around. Draco was standing behind them with a smirk plastered on his face. He was drooling over Calla, head to toe. Ethan pushed her behind his tall frame and glared at Draco.

"You know, you can't beat me Ethan, not like this." Draco said sarcastically. "I will kill you and then..." he added and licked his lips while his eyes were on Calla. Calla shivered when she heard him. Ethan couldn't control his anger anymore and he lunged himself at Draco. Ethan was fast but not fast enough. In an easy swing, Draco grabbed Ethan by his throat and slammed him on the ground. Calla heard a loud crack and Ethan Yelled in pain. He felt his few ribs cracked. Draco dug his claws into Ethan's throat and leaned closer.

"Now I will take her right in front of you." Draco whispered in Ethan's ear and pulled himself off of him. He turned around and Calla kneed him between his legs, as hard as she could. But it didn't affect him at all. He smirked widely and grabbed Calla by her neck. He scooped her in his arms and threw her on the table near them. He hovered over her, pinned her on the surface of the table.

"Ethan..." she screamed loudly and tried to push Draco off of her body but he was too strong for her. She freed one of her hands from his hold and scratched his cheek. He gritted his teeth as the blood pooled out of the wounds she had given him. He slapped her cheek hard and she spit blood out of her mouth. He grabbed her hand again and started leaning in.

"Don't worry, I would love to taste your blood..." Draco said.

CHAPTER 32

(WARNING... THIS CHAPTER CONTAINS VIOLENT SCENES THAT COULD BE DISTURBING FOR SOME READERS.)

"Now I will take her right in front of you." Draco whispered in Ethan's ear and pulled himself off of him. He turned around and Calla kneed him between his legs, as hard as she could. But it didn't affect him at all. He smirked widely and grabbed Calla by her neck. He scooped her in his arms and threw her on the table near them. He hovered over her, pinned her on the surface of the table.

"Ethan..." she screamed loudly and tried to push Draco off of her body but he was too strong for her. She freed one of her hands from his hold and scratched his cheek. He gritted his teeth as the blood pooled out of the wounds she had given him. He slapped her cheek hard and she spat blood out of her mouth. He grabbed her hand again and started leaning in.

"Don't worry, I would love to taste your blood..." Draco said. Before his lips could touch Calla's lips, they heard an ear piercing growl. He turned around and found Ethan standing. The blood was still pooling out of his wounds. His eyes were pitch black and his fangs and claws were bigger than usual. The veins across his temples were bulging. Draco hopped off of Calla's body and attacked Ethan once again. But this time, Ethan was fast enough. He clawed Draco's chest deeply then punched his stomach. Draco went flying and fell on the ground with a loud thud. In a flash, Ethan was standing beside him. Ethan grabbed his neck and held him high from the ground. He slammed Draco on the ground and started tearing his flesh apart. Calla screamed loudly as she saw a monster in front of her. She clapped her both hands on her mouth and ran away. Ethan looked back and found Calla running away. He smiled and with one last swing, he ripped Draco's throat out. He enjoyed seeing Draco's soul leaving his body painfully.

He stood up and sniffed the air. He smiled as he caught Calla's sweet berries scent and started following it. Calla was hiding in a room, she locked herself and sobbed quietly. She could hear the screams coming from outside. He was killing everything that was coming in his way. Like he wasn't himself. Like he was a monster who knows to kill only. Calla's gaze fell on a mirror in front of her. She looked at her reflection in the mirror. It was her but her clothes were changed. "Don't be scared, Calla. You know me, don't you." The reflection asked Calla and she remembered the picture Ethan showed her. It was Lilly.

"You need to help me. He is killing everything. You have to tell Grandpa Ashley." Calla pleaded between her sobs.

"Ashley would come here but Ethan will kill him as well, Calla. Draco has awakened his monster. Now that monster will kill anything that will come between him and you." Lilly replied. Calla sat on the ground and hugged her knees.

"I know Calla. You are scared. And it's okay to be scared. I know what you have witnessed, will become a nightmare for you. But trust me Calla, you are the only one who can stop him. He is bleeding too much. He doesn't have much time. He will die soon if you won't help him." Lilly said.

"How can I help him? He is strong, he is fast and now he is a monster who is killing everything." Calla replied between her sobs.

"Calla, do you remember those times when Ethan had saved your life? There were so many times when he saved your life while putting his own life in danger. I know you are scared, I would be as well. But let me tell you one thing, nothing could stop him but you. Calla that monster was asleep for years. Ethan can't put him back to sleep, you need to do that for him, like you did before. You have to help him." Lilly replied. Calla remembered their time together, how he had protected her, loved her, cared for her. It was her time to do the same for him. Calla wiped her tears and stood up again. She stepped closer to the mirror and took a deep breath.

"Tell me what I need to do?" Calla asked and Lilly smiled.

"Nothing much, you see those shredded pieces of glass. Pick one and make a small cut on your neck. Just for your blood to pool out a little. You have to get that locket off of your neck that Sophie gifted you. That pendant is protecting you from Ethan and keeping him away from you. Pull it out and put it aside. Make a small cut on your neck and lay down on the bed. Let him come to you." Lilly explained.

"He will kill me." Calla replied and shivered in fear.

"He won't kill you Calla. Trust me. He loves you more than you can imagine. Now trust me and do as I say. He will drink your blood, enough to get back into his senses." Lilly replied back.

"Okay. I guess I need to trust him and his love for me." Calla said and took a deep breath. She took off the pendant and put it aside. She picked a shredded piece of glass, laid down on the bed and made a small cut on her neck. She felt a sharp pain and blood started dripping out of her wound. In a few seconds, Ethan broke the door and in a flash he was over her body. He opened his mouth wide and leaned in. Calla screamed loudly as Ethan dug his fangs into her neck. He started drinking her blood.

"That's it Calla. Stay calm. He won't hurt you, he just needs blood." Calla heard Lilly saying. Calla closed her eyes because of the pain. She then opened them again to see Ethan. Ethan pulled his fangs out of her neck and Calla saw his eyes turned back blue. With wide eyes, he looked at Calla

who was still wounded. He quickly grabbed her wrists and pinned her on the bed. He leaned in and licked her wounds. He did that out of blue, then he realized it never worked for Calla. He crawled off of the bed, put her pendant back on her neck, scooped her in his arms and carried her bridal style. He was about to exit the room when he noticed her wounds were now sealed, like that weren't there at all. Ethan sighed in relief. She was healed. He kissed her forehead and held her tightly. He stepped out of the room and looked at that chaos he had made. Torn apart bodies, blood and bones everywhere. Ethan couldn't believe he had done this all. He looked at the door of the castle and found Dalton standing there. He laid Calla gently on a couch and knelt down on the ground in shame.

"What's the matter boy? Why do I see shame in your eyes?" Dalton asked.

"Because of what I have done. I am a monster, Master." Ethan replied in a disappointed tone as tears started flowing freely from his blue eyes.

"No my boy, if you wouldn't have done that, he would have killed you. He wanted her, you saved her. But we are not done here. You will find something in the basement, go and get it." Dalton replied and patted his shoulder. Ethan got up and turned towards the staircase.

"Remember, ask them everything then kill them all. You have to keep the promise you have made to Calla." Dalton said and vanished. Ethan nodded his head, looked at his angel and zoomed towards the basement of that castle.

CHAPTER 33.

In a flash Ethan was inside the room that belonged to Celine. She gulped hard as she saw Ethan stepping inside of her room. She started stepping backwards until her back hit the wall. "You thought I would be dead. Well, guess what, I'm as surprised as you are right now." Ethan said with a smirk.

"Please, let me go. I did as I was ordered." Celine replied in a pleading tone.

"How about you start talking and we will think about letting you go later? Spill it out, you know everything and I can see it. I want to hear it from you." Ethan said and she felt her throat dried.

"Draco did this all. I was just following orders." She pleaded again.

"Spill it out." Ethan yelled at her and she shivered in fear.

"Draco killed Master Braxton. He ripped his throat out. He did the same with Master Braxton's loyal servant, who saw Draco killing Master Braxton. Then he called Mara and Xavier here to kill them and get the ring of the Master. But Xavier was smart, he didn't bring it here. Before killing Master Braxton, he told me and all the witches to trigger Storm Riders. He wanted to control them so they would do what he wanted. But he never knew, Storm Riders were controlled by their leaders only. After the Storm Riders left, he murdered Master Braxton and then he killed Mara and Xavier. Then he went to abduct the pure blood child, but it was too late. The Storm Riders took her away. He was the one who ordered all his vampires to stalk Calla and the people around her. He knew about you as well. He never had seen Calla before. He only knew about Sophie. He was the one who set Calla's office on fire. He was the one who asked your master's children to abduct Calla so he can trade her for the pure blood vampire." Celine replied.

"So you called the Storm Riders?" Ethan asked and she nodded her head.

Ethan grabbed her wrist and pulled her in the hall with the other ninety nine witches. He started reciting a spell and the hall started heating up. He kept repeating it until the hall was on fire. Ethan smirked and shut the door. He had casted a boundary spell before he entered the hall and there is only one way out of the hall, that too was bound by Ethan. He zoomed back upstairs, scooped Calla in his arms again and zoomed back to the hotel. With his fast speed no one saw him coming. He cleaned Calla first and changed her clothes. Then he went into the bathroom and took a quick shower. He stepped out of the bathroom, wore his clothes, packed their bags and started their journey back to New York.

Ethan was sitting on the floor of his master's room. He was sitting in yoga style, his eyes were closed and he was reciting a spell. He wanted to know how he got his powers back. He was calling his Master. After a few minutes he felt someone sitting behind him on the bed. He smiled and opened his eyes. He found himself sitting by the river. "Now what's bothering you my boy?" Dalton asked and patted his shoulder.

"I can remember her blood draining powers of Brandon. Then what had brought my powers back to me?" Ethan asked.

"Calla gave you her blood willingly, you didn't force her to drink her blood. But I think the main reason is you two being destined together. I did bind you to her but I don't know what connected your destinies. Now no matter what you do to her, she will be with you till death. You two will live together and will die together as well." Dalton replied.

"What do you mean by what I do to her?" Ethan asked.

"I know you and I trust you. But the monster, the devil inside you, I'm not sure about it. I don't even know if it's asleep again or still awake, waiting for the right time to strike hard this time. You know I have never seen that part of you ever, not in the past and not even in the future." Dalton explained.

"You are saying that I can hurt her in future?" Ethan asked.

"I don't know. I know nothing about that part of yours." Dalton replied.

"Then I'll leave her. So she can live." Ethan said.

"I don't think so it could ever work in your case. As I said, you both are destined to live together and die together." Dalton replied.

"I don't care about myself." Ethan said.

"You can try it. I'm not sure if it will work or not." Dalton replied. Ethan nodded his head and closed his eyes. He opened his eyes again, stood up and went back to their bedroom. Sidney was sitting in the room when she saw Ethan packing his bags. He packed his bags and turned to face Sidney.

"I have to leave. I am leaving her with you because I know you will never hurt her and will protect her with your life. Just stay away from her during full Moons. She will be mad at me but soon things will be fine for her. After all, she wouldn't be happy seeing me after she wakes up. As for Sophie, I will find her, she will be back soon." Ethan said and zoomed out of his house.

Calla opened her eyes again and found herself laying on her bed. She frowned her brows and sat up on the bed. She was alone in the room. She crawled out of the bed and went to the bathroom. She

took a quick shower, wrapped a towel around her figure and stepped out of the bathroom. She went to the closet and looked at her neck. She could remember Ethan bit her neck but there were no wounds, not even the mark of the cut she had made by herself. She wore casual jeans and t-shirt and stepped out of the bedroom. She went downstairs and found Sidney sitting in the living room. Calla went to her and wrapped her arms around her. "Finally, you are up. How are you feeling now?" Sidney asked.

"I'm fine, how are you?" Calla asked back.

"I'm fine. I was just worried about you." Sidney replied.

"About me, I'm totally fine." Calla said. Her stomach growled loudly and she patted her tummy.

"What's for breakfast?" Calla asked as she made her way to the kitchen.

"Pancakes, I hope you will like it." Sidney replied.

"Wait, you cooked? In Ethan's kitchen? I can't believe it." Calla asked and shook her head.

"Yeah, I have been here since he brought you back." Sidney replied in a serious tone.

"Wait, What do you mean? Where is he?" Calla asked in confusion.

"He hasn't been back, he brought you back then went to his master's room, then he just packed his bags and left. I don't know what is in his head but I don't think he would come back here, ever." Sidney replied. Calla held her breath when she heard Sidney.

"Why?" Calla whispered.

"Maybe because whatever had happened between you both. He hadn't told me anything. He just said you wouldn't want to see him once you wake up." Sidney explained. Calla dropped on one of the chairs in the kitchen. Her elbows rested on the kitchen counter with her head in her hands. Calla couldn't believe he just left her thinking she would hate him. The truth was completely opposite.

"Have you tried calling him?" Calla asked and tried to hold her tears in her eyes.

"We all have. He is not responding to any of us." It was Ashley who replied to Calla.

"What was he thinking?" Calla asked.

"None of us know where is he or what he is up to? If I'm being honest with you, Calla I don't think so he will ever come back. He hid that monster from you and you just saw it." Ashley spilled the bitter truth. Calla glared at them all. She went back upstairs and packed her bags. She stepped out of Ethan's house when Sidney stood in front of her, blocking the door.

"Cal, you can't go anywhere. I promised him that I would take care of you." Sidney tried to reason with her.

"Get out of my way Sid. I don't want to live here. That coward just left me without any explanations." Calla replied and tears started flowing freely from her eyes.

"Cal, try to understand him. I know what he's been thinking after he left you here." Sidney replied.

"I said move Sid. I don't need his protection." Calla replied and wiped her tears. "And you all, dare to follow me and I swear you'll regret it." She added pointing her finger at Ashley and his vampires. She hopped into her car and drove off. She checked her pendant in her neck and took it out of her shirt. She looked back to make sure no one was following her. She smiled mischievously and drove back to her house.

In an hour she parked her car and we went into her house. She went to the kitchen and took out a glass bottle. She dropped it on the floor and it shredded into pieces. She took one of the pieces in her hand and smiled.

"So you think you are the only one here who is smart. Well think again Ethan, because Lilly had given your secret in my hands and I can use it the way I want. You think you can run away and I will let you, you are wrong. I know what I have to do to get you back here. And I know very well, you will come in a few seconds. Just wait and watch what I have in mind for you." Calla thought.

She stood up and went to her bedroom. She sat on one of the couches in her room. She took off the pendant again and put it aside. She made a small cut on her palm and screamed on the top of her lungs.

CHAPTER 34

Calla took one of the shredded pieces of broken bottle in her hand and smiled. She stood up and went to her bedroom. She sat on one of the couches in her room. She took off the pendant again and put it aside. She made a small cut on her palm and screamed on the top of her lungs. In a minute or so, the door of her bedroom burst open and Ethan stepped in. Ethan looked around and found no one except for Calla. He sighed in relief and started walking towards her. He held Calla's hand and brought it to his lips. He licked her wound and in a few seconds it healed. "When did that happen?" Calla asked as she held her hand high.

"I don't know, right after I drank your blood, I guess." Ethan replied in a guilty tone. Calla held his hand and kissed his cheek.

"Why are you feeling guilty?" Calla whispered.

"You have witnessed something I kept hidden from you. I didn't want you to see the monster inside me." Ethan replied. Calla rested her head on his chest and wrapped her arms around him tightly. Ethan also wrapped his arms around her and kissed the top of her head.

"If it wasn't for that monster, you would be dead and I don't know what Draco would have done to me." Calla replied in a low voice. She looked at him with a grateful smile on her face.

"How are you feeling?" Ethan asked in a worried tone.

"I'm fine Ethan. Don't change the topic. I know what is going on in your head." Calla replied angrily. She broke the hug and punched his chest hard.

"What were you thinking when you decided to leave without any explanations? You have done so much for me. It was once I got the chance to do something for you. I know it was all horrible but if you wouldn't have done that, I won't be standing in front of you right now." Calla reasoned with him.

"I don't know. I felt like you wouldn't like to see me around anymore. The monster in your nightmares is more scary." Ethan replied.

"How can you just jump to conclusions? Without asking me. I can see you have gained your powers back. Couldn't you just read my mind before leaving me like that?" Calla asked.

"How do you know I got my powers back?" Ethan asked back.

"Like you know about the monster in my dreams. Ethan we are connected, you said it yourself. Then why did you go away from me?" Calla asked.

"Because I didn't want to see hatred or fear for me in your eyes." Ethan explained.

"I know whatever happened there, was a nightmare for both of us. But that doesn't mean I would hate you or something." Calla replied. Ethan smiled and pulled her in a hug. She tried to push him away because she was still angry at him but she couldn't resist his scent. She inhaled his scent and buried her face in his chest.

"So, you saw Lilly?" Ethan asked. Calla nodded her head.

"She was the one who gave me the idea to make you drink my blood." Calla replied.

"You and I are having the same dreams again. Your blood is far more powerful than I had imagined. Your blood actually broke the curse that was casted five hundred years ago and that too by the most powerful witch I have ever known." Ethan said.

"Promise me you will never leave me alone again. Ethan, I can't imagine living without you." Calla pleaded.

"I promise, I won't. I'm so sorry, Calla. I should have waited for you to wake up." Ethan apologized.

"It's okay, just don't do that ever again." Calla replied.

"What if that monster came back out again, and tried to hurt you?" Ethan asked.

"Then I will kiss him to fall asleep so you can come back to me." Calla replied confidently.

"You are just like Lilly." He replied and pulled her to the bed. They both laid down, cuddling with each other. Calla laid on top of him. He wrapped his arms around her waist. They laid there in silence, enjoying each other's warmth. Calla snuggled closer to his chest and he kissed the top of her head.

A week passed and everything was getting back to normal. Calla was back at Ethan's place. Ethan wasn't worried anymore about Calla's security. Draco was the one behind it and Ethan killed him. Now the only thing left was to find Sophie, which was very difficult. Ethan knew nothing about the Storm Riders except for the stories his mother had told him. Calla started her work again. Until they would recover from all the damage Draco's men had done, Calla suggested Sidney, to use Xavier's house as their office.

It was evening when Calla came back home. She knew Ethan would be in his master's room. She went straight to Dalton's bedroom. Ethan was busy in his work when Calla wrapped her arms around him from behind. He smiled and turned around. He also wrapped his arms around her. He scooped her up in his arms and carried her like a baby. Calla also wrapped her legs around his waist. He captured her lips in a hot and passionate kiss. He bit her lower lip and she moaned loudly

in his mouth. He caged her between the book shelf and his tall frame. She threw her head back as he started sucking the skin of her neck. Her head collided with the box on the shelf. It fell on the ground and broke into pieces. They broke their romance session and knelt down on the ground. While Ethan was collecting all the pieces to fix the box, Calla found a piece of paper under the box pieces. She pulled it out and looked at it. It was a letter, it was written by Dalton himself. She showed it to Ethan who was surprised to see something he had never seen before. They started reading the letter together.

"My dear Calla and Ethan,

If you have found this latter, that means you are seeking for answers. From now on, you are going to find 15 more letters like this. All fifteen letters together will tell you the only way to defeat the Storm Riders. But you have to find the letters first. Each letter will take you to the people who need your help. You will receive fifteen letters to help some people. Each letter will take you to the next letter. You have to collect all the letters by the dark day. The day when the Sun will be dark and day will turn into night.

The first thing you need to do is help the innocent girls who are bothered by a vampire, named Austin. He frightens people, harasses innocent girls. He drinks the blood of the pure souls without their will. It grants him more power and satisfaction. You go and meet Mrs Paul, whose daughter, Novella is his new victim. And there is no one who is willing to help them. Because the vampire is too strong for anyone to handle but you both. Mrs Paul lives in New Orleans with her 3 children. I hope you will be able to reach the second letter.

Good luck.

Dalton."

Calla refolded the letter and they both stared at each other for a moment. "I think we have to go to New Orleans." Ethan replied while standing up. He offered his hand to Calla, who happily accepted it and stood up with him. He kissed her again and they both stepped out of Dalton's room.

CHAPTER 35

Novella's POV:-

It was Friday night, I was coming back home from work. I stayed there a bit later than usual. My house wasn't far away from my work place and I always like walking alone in the dark. It wasn't that dark though. It was half past six in the evening. I was slowly walking towards my home and was enjoying the chilly air. My phone started ringing in my clutch and I pulled it out and looked at the screen. It was none other than my best friend Rose.

"Hey, what's up?" I said and kept slowly walking.

"Where are you?" Rose asked me in an angry tone.

"I'm just walking back home. You know, Fridays are more difficult than the other days." I replied carelessly.

"Are you literally out of your mind, Ella. Don't you know about the incidents going on in our town?" Rose scolded me.

"Come on, Rose. You know I don't believe any of the people's stories about this monster or what, I don't want to know." I replied. It was true, we were having some serious problems about young girls being abducted. Some came back alive but the others were found dead into the woods. People started making stories about a monster with red eyes behind the abductions. They said he was taking them into the woods to drink their blood. Some people believed it, along with my family and friends, but not me. I was not stupid to believe some man made stories.

"I don't care if you believe it or not. I told you to come back home before the dusk everyday and yet here you are walking all alone in the dark." Rose again scolded me. I didn't know what was wrong with everyone. They were behaving like I was a baby and they all needed to take care of me.

"I will be fine, Rose. Don't worry too much about me." I replied. Suddenly, I felt someone's eyes on me. I turned around to look but there was no one except for me walking alone.

"You don't understand the risk. You are too innocent to understand the monstrous creatures like him." Rose replied in a serious tone.

"You worry too much. I'm gonna hang up because I need to get back home." I said and without hearing her further I hung up and put my phone back into my clutch.

I was walking by the treeline of the forest when I felt that again. Like someone was watching me or following me. I looked back but found nobody. I started walking faster than before. I didn't know

why, but I was feeling something was wrong. I was just two miles away from my house when someone grabbed my wrist and pulled me in a darker corner. I wanted to scream but they put their hand over my mouth to block my screams. I looked at the person in front of me. He was tall and muscular. Silky long hair that reached to his shoulders. Sharp jawline with white skin. I looked into his eyes, they were green and glowing like stars in the night. He grabbed a fist full of my hair and pulled it. It didn't hurt me though. He did it to tilt my head up. My gaze dropped on his sharp fangs and my stomach turned in fear. I gulped hard and tried to push him away. But he was too strong for me to push. He leaned in and my breath hitched.

"I'm not here to kill you but to save you. You see, the people aren't wrong about the monster who is killing girls. If I let you go now, you won't make it to your house. You have to stay calm." He whispered in my ear. I licked my lips and tried to keep my breaths in my control. Just then, I saw him. The monster with red eyes. He was sniffing the air like a dog and looking around everywhere but at the place I was hiding. In a while, he stopped sniffing. He stomped his foot on the ground hard and in a flash he was gone. I looked at him and found a smirk plastered on his face.

"How did you know that he would be looking for me?" I asked him with frowned brows.

"Haven't you heard of the girls who came back home? I was the one who saved them." He replied but I saw guilt in his eyes.

"And what about the girls who were found dead in the forest?" I asked angrily.

"Unfortunately, I couldn't save them all. He is more powerful than me. Sometimes I understand his target and sometimes he gets them before I could even get the idea." He replied with narrowed eyes.

"Then it means that I was just lucky. But how did you save me?" I asked in confusion.

"He was stalking you for a few days. I was just in the right place, at the right time." He replied and shrugged his shoulders.

"What do you mean by he is more powerful than you? Are you... like him...?" I asked and he understood my question.

"You ask too many questions. Time for you to forget it all or I will be in trouble." He said and stared into my eyes. Suddenly, I saw his eyes widened. He sniffed the air once, then twice. He stepped back and in a blink of an eye, he vanished. I turned around and found a few people walking from my neighborhood. They saw me standing in a dark corner and came rushing towards me.

"Ella, are you okay dear? Your parents are looking for you. They are so worried." Mrs Brown asked me. I nodded my head with a small smile on my face. To convince them that everything is fine. They first gave me a suspicious look but then believed me. Or maybe they just wanted me to

believe that they are convinced. Mrs Brown held my hand and we started walking towards my home. In a few minutes, we reached my house. Mr and Mrs Brown bid their goodbyes as they saw my parents rushing towards me.

"Where were you? We were so worried." My mom said and pulled me in a long hug.

"Mon, I'm fine. Don't worry." I said.

"That's it. You are not going to work anymore." Said my father. He looked pissed.

"Wait, my father and pissed. I don't believe this. What have I done that made him this angry at me." I thought to myself.

"Dad, I'm fine. You can't tell me to leave my job. It's my dream job." I begged him. I knew something was wrong.

"We will discuss this later. Let's go inside." My mom said and led me inside the house. As we got in, my mom led me to the drawing room. I wanted to ask them why but I got my answer when I saw two strangers sitting in our house. A man and a woman. I looked at my parents in confusion.

"Who are they, mom?" I asked in confusion.

"We are here to help you, Novella." Said the strange man. He stood up and came close to me. He leaned closer and sniffed.

"So, you were attacked, weren't you?" The strange man said and I stared at him with my mouth agape and wide eyes.

CHAPTER 36

Novella's POV:-

"Who are they, mom?" I asked in confusion.

"We are here to help you, Novella." Said the strange man. He stood up and came close to me. He leaned closer and sniffed.

"So, you were attacked, weren't you?" The strange man said and I stared at him with my mouth agape and wide eyes.

"W..what?" I stammered.

"Ella, meet Mr Carter and Miss Davis. They are here to help us all." My mom replied. I looked at her then back at the man standing in front of us.

"I don't think so she was attacked, Ethan. She looks fine to me." Miss Davis said.

"But I can smell a vampire on her." The man named Ethan replied.

"Look, nothing happened to me. I'm perfectly fine. We don't need anyone's help." I said pointing my finger towards the strangers.

"I don't think we asked your opinion. Just answer the questions we will ask you." Miss Davis said and my anger rose. I stomped my foot on the ground and left the drawing room. I went straight up to my bedroom and locked my room. I sighed in relief and went to my bed. I laid down and remembered the strange man who saved my life. He was strong and very attractive. I smiled and felt butterflies in my stomach. After a few minutes I heard some noises from downstairs. I stood up and went to my balcony. I saw Ethan and Miss Davis leaving. I went back into the room as they left and went to the bathroom. I took a quick shower, wore my clothes and went downstairs. I had my dinner in peace. The whole family was on the table and we were eating together. But it was like I was eating all alone. No one was talking, no one even tried to start any kind of conversation with each other. After the dinner everyone went back to their rooms and so did I.

I opened my room and stepped in. I locked the door but before I would be able to turn on the lights, someone grabbed me by my elbow and pulled me on the bed. Their hand was on my mouth so I couldn't scream.

"What did you tell them about me?" I heard his familiar voice and I calmed down. He removed his hand from my mouth and I looked into his eyes which were glowing more in the dark room.

"Nothing." I whispered.

"Good, you need to forget about me or I am in big trouble." He said. He again stared into my eyes. I saw his eyes glow even brighter. Suddenly, someone turned on the lights of my room. He got up and jumped out of my balcony. I turned to look but I saw Miss Davis standing at the door.

"I thought you both left?" I asked and crawled out of my bed.

"That's what we wanted you to think." She said it with a smirk.

"But I saw you leaving." I said.

"Novella, you know nothing about these creatures. We are here to help you, nothing else. He was in your room, can you imagine how dangerous it can be. What if Ethan wouldn't be here." She asked and my eyes widened in horror.

"Wait, what do you mean? I just saw you here." I asked her.

"That's because Ethan is faster than your eyesight. I'm sure Ethan must have caught him and will kill him." She replied.

"No no, you don't understand. You have to stop him. He was just here to make me forget about him. He saved my life. He is not the killer but the savior." I said.

"What?" Miss Davis asked.

"He isn't the one who is killing girls. He is saving them. Please do something to stop Mr Carter." I said. She quickly ran into the balcony and I followed her. She took a deep breath and screamed his name loudly. In a few seconds, I saw Mr Carter was out of the treeline and that strange man was on Mr Carter's shoulder. I ran out of my bedroom and went downstairs. Mr Carter threw him on one of the couches and turned to look at us.

"We have gotten the wrong person." Miss Davis said as she walked towards Mr Carter.

"Are you kidding me, Calla?" Mr Carter said in an angry tone. His voice was so masculine and deep that we all jumped in fear. But that woman Calla, it's like she wasn't afraid of him at all.

"Novella told me that this guy saved her from Austin. Tell me, what's your name then?" She asked that stranger without any hesitation. She pulled out the handkerchief from his mouth and he coughed.

"Dustin, my name is Dustin. I am not the killer." He said and looked at me.

"He is not lying. I'm sorry I didn't tell you before but he's the one who had saved me." I said in a pleading tone. Ethan started mumbling some words I didn't understand. Then snapped his fingers and Dustin stood up from the couch. It was like he was tied up with ropes that I wasn't able to see.

"Then tell us where is the other one?" Ethan asked and Dustin nodded his head.

"We can't catch him without Novella." Dustin said and everyone turned to look at me.

"If me being bait would save the others then I am ready." I replied confidently. I heard a soft sob of my mother.

"I promise you, I will bring your daughter back to you. Safe and untouched." Ethan said to my mother. She and my father nodded. Calla pulled out a pendant from her neck and handed it to my mother.

"Here, it will protect you all here so we can do our job there." Calla said and we turned around and stepped out of my house. Dustin took us deep into the forest. Ethan was holding Calla's hand. I could see they were a couple. Dustin was walking with me. I was shivering in fear. Dustin must have noticed that. He intertwined his fingers with mine and gave my hand a little squeeze. Just then, we all heard a monstrous growl. Ethan smirked and ran away. Leaving Calla with us all alone in that dark Woods.

"Bastard, he ran away." Dustin said angrily and stood in front of both me and Calla. I was shaking and Calla was all calmed and quiet.

"I thought you were smarter than that brother. Bringing my meal to me and with dessert. I am going to enjoy them both." That monster with red eyes said with a mischievous grin on his face. He was slowly walking towards us like a predator stalking its prey.

"What kind of fool you really are Austin. Can't you smell death around you." Calla growled at that monster confidently and started laughing hysterically. I couldn't believe it. Even Dustin was afraid of that monster but Calla pushed past Dustin and stood in front of the monster.

"You are nothing but a piece of trash. You know, you are good for nothing. I think you are a rat, no no no. You are a bug that will soon be dead." Calla said to that monster.

"Is she crazy?" I whispered to Dustin.

"I am a hundred percent sure she is." He replied back. Hearing Calla, Austin lunged himself on her but she didn't move an inch, didn't even blink her eyes. Just as he was about to grab her neck, we saw Ethan jumped on him. He slammed Austin by the nearest tree. Just then, Calla grabbed the sword from Ethan's back and in a few seconds we saw a cut on Austin's neck. Calla swung the sword in the air and Austin's head dropped on the ground. Ethan again mumbled something and snapped his fingers three times. Austin's body started burning. Dustin sighed and smiled.

"I didn't run away. If he would have seen me here with you, he would have ran away and we don't have time to play hide and seek. You seemed like a good person Dustin. Rule this forest, mark it as your territory. Protect the people here like you have done till now." Ethan said and patted Dustin's shoulder.

"People think of me as a monster." Dustin replied in a disappointed tone.

"They won't, not anymore." Calla replied and smiled at Ethan. He mumbled something again and clapped his hands three times. He scooped Calla in his arms and Dustin did the same to me. In a flash we were inside of my house. Dustin left me on the door and I followed Calla and Ethan into the house.

"Time to find the letters." Calla said and closed her eyes. She started turning in circular motion then started walking towards the bookshelf in our living room. She stopped in front of the shelf and stared at it for a minute. Then she pulled out an old book that belonged to my great grandpa. Nobody ever touched it. She blew the dust off of it and opened it. There was an envelope in that. She took it out and put the book back into its place. They looked at my parents and smiled.

"Thank you." My mother said. They nodded their heads and in a blink of an eye they vanished.

I was again laying on my bed. I was thinking about Calla. She was so strong and brave I wanted to be like her. Just then I felt someone crawling into my bed. Before I could move, they pinned me on my bed. I saw the green glowing eyes and I smiled. I was about to open my mouth to tell him that I don't want to forget him but he sealed it with his mouth. He captured my lips into a long sensual kiss. I froze at first but kissed him back with the same passion as his. He broke the kiss after a few minutes then pecked my forehead.

"Good night Ella." He said and in a flash he left.

CHAPTER 37

Lucas' POV:-

There is a mystery lurks in the dark woods where no one dares enter. The town keeps skeptical about the mysterious creature living there. No one dares face it, fearing they might suffer the luck of some. Little by little, people have been disappearing, without leaving any clue as to where they end up or how they disappeared.

Town's folks suspect the creature is a Wendigo. A monster with human characteristics or maybe a spirit who has possessed a human being and turned them into the monstrous being they are today. It is said to invoke murders, cannibalism, and insatiable greed.

One of our own was the first one to disappear and we suspect he might be the one who had turned into one of those monsters, making other people end up with the same fate, but there has not been any proof of it. Gary Hebert was the town shy boy who everyone would make fun of. He had to stay quiet while bullies in school would make his life a living hell. One day he decided to walk into the woods and no one has ever seen him since.

My name is Lucas Harrison. I am considered the best tracker and hunter in the town. Not only animals but also Paranormal beings. All-day and all night, people in our town searched, lighting the way with flashlights and lanterns. Searching with dogs and carrying shotguns. It all seemed like a horror movie waiting to happen.

We didn't have any luck finding him, so we had to put a stop to the search. Years had gone by and no sign of the poor boy. It was all quiet and peaceful, until one night we could hear loud screams coming from the woods again. Later those screams turned into waves of laughter.

"Teenagers at it again," I thought as I was reading the newspaper while sipping my coffee. The diner was empty today, with only a few people scattered all over the place. I heard the bell, indicating a new customer was in.

He searched the whole diner when his eyes fell on me. He walked over and sat down in front of me. "Can I help you?" I asked with curiosity. He was fiddling his fingers and I could tell he was nervous by the way he was shaking and I noticed drops of sweats falling through his forehead.

"Yes, sir. I need your help. My brother and his girlfriend have gone missing since last night. And I am afraid they had gone to the woods alone. I am aware of how dangerous these woods are and I am afraid they might be in danger" he mentioned.

I shook my head and took a deep breath. Those screams I just heard, can that be them? Impossible, if they have gone missing since last night, they must be dead by now. Those screams must be someone else's. For years foolish kids have been venturing into that dangerous place, despite the warning coming from everyone in town.

"I am not sure I can do anything to help. Have you tried the Sheriff?" I asked while taking another sip of my coffee.

"Sir, I have tried. They won't listen to me. They dismiss me every time I try to tell them what happened. They don't care. I have heard about how good of a tracker and Hunter you are and you are my last hope. Please help me find them" he said on the verge to cry.

"What is your name boy?" I asked, studying him.

"Gerald Johnson" he replied.

"Well Mr. Johnson, I am not sure how much help I can be. This town has searched for missing kids back and forth and no luck. It's like they disappear from thin air" I said, folding my newspaper and standing up from my booth while leaving a couple of dollar bills and walking out. The kid following me.

I light up my cigarette and take a whiff while the kids still stand next to me. I look down at him and raise my eyebrow. "What are you doing kid?" I ask.

"I am going with you sir" he replied, zipping up his jacket and taking a small knife from his pocket.

"Do you think that knife will save you?" I laughed, but gotta admit, the boy had good intentions. I decided to send him home while I searched for his brother. He didn't want to leave, but I had to force him. I prepared my shotgun and headed in. I hoped to find them. As I was walking in, I could hear nothing but silence. The silence was never a good thing. You never knew when something might jump and attack you.

I walked for miles, but nothing. No sign of anything or anyone that might have come here. I reached a cave and I hoped they would be here, thinking they got lost and waited until daylight came to go back. I entered that cave, and a strong smell hit my nose. Blood and fear mixed together.

They must have been here. I entered deeper in the cave and I could see blood smeared in the stones and walls. I kept searching, but couldn't find anyone, not even bodies. It was getting pretty late so I decided to stop the search for now and go back home. I would resume it again in the morning. That kid depended on me, but I doubted anyone would turn out.

As I was changing to clothes to sleep, I saw from the corner of my eyes a big figure. I looked up and I could see it running away. I quickly went outside and followed it. I was able to make out what it

was. It looked like a giant deer standing in two legs, with big antlers and it had hands with claws on them and its ribs were showing. It was a scary creature. No one has ever seen one up close, they all heard stories about them. I went in to get my jacket and shotgun and decided to follow the creature into the woods once again.

My feet dragged me again to that cave. I didn't go in this time, but I decided to call the creature out.

"Gary? Is that you boy?" I called, my instinct told me he was there and he was the creature causing all these disappearances. I stood there for a few minutes, shotgun in hand ready to aim at him in case he attacked. I could hear some growls, and I was prepared. The Wendigo came out of the cave and walked slowly towards me. His eyes were Scarlet red and his mouth was drooling and I could see blood all over his body.

"Gary? If that is you in there, please listen to me. If you are the one kidnapping all these kids and eating them, tell me" I said, knowing he can't even speak and he won't tell me.

"Come on kid. Tell me where they are. Their families are desperate and anxious"

All he could do was look at me and walk even closer. He was just a few inches from me and his size was incredible. He was easily over 7 feet tall and it's appearance up close was intimidating. I wouldn't give in to fear. I stood in front of him waiting for a response. I didn't get any and instead, he walked away from me and into the cave. At the entrance he stopped and looked at me, motioning for me to follow. I did against my better judgment and walked into that cave with him.

We walked deep into it, the cave getting colder and damp every time. As we were getting deeper I could hear whimpers. They were here? He guided me to where the sounds came from. And when we got in, there they were. All the missing people huddled up together, and I was sure Gerald's brother was here too along with his girlfriend. They were cold and scared.

"What is all this?" I asked the Wendigo but he ignored me and kept walking away "answer me! why are all these kids here?" He looked at me and growled. I walked to the kids and tried to get them out but the Wendigo stopped me, hitting me so hard I ended up against a wall. He stood in front of them and I could see their faces.

"Why are you keeping them here? What is it about them that you can't let them go?" I asked. He slowly shifted until he was in his human form. It was indeed Gary Hebert. But he was not that teenage kid anymore. He was a man. I felt that I failed him, and the whole town did too. We should have not given up on him. We should have kept searching for him until we found him. That poor boy must have been scared out of his mind when he found himself in this precarious situation.

"Why are you doing this?" I asked again, to which he replied...

"Witchcraft."

CHAPTER 38

I couldn't understand anything he said. I stood up and looked at him walk away. I needed answers and I needed to save them. The only word to come out of his mouth was witchcraft. Was he turned by a witch? And if he was, what purpose was he serving her?

"Gary, you have to let these people go. They are scared and their families are back home waiting for them. They are losing hope to see them alive" I tried to convince him.

"I can't do that. The witch needs them for a sacrifice. If I don't deliver them, I will be bound to stay like this forever" he replied.

"But think about their parents. They are desperate to find them. And look at them, they're scared for their lives" He ignored my pleas and shifted again to his Wendigo, maybe to hunt down more kids. It was really hard to convince him, but I was not going to let him take more innocent lives. I needed to find this witch and make sure she stopped this curse. I had to leave the cave, feeling guilty for leaving those poor kids in there with Gary. They didn't look like they were hurt, but I needed to hurry before that witch showed up and hurt them.

I arrived in town and headed to the sheriff's station to let them know where the kids were. "Are you sure you saw them?" he asked, doubting my words. I leaned on his desk and gave him a hard stare.

"If I wasn't sure, I wouldn't bother you with silly things. Those kids are in that cave, and if we don't take them out, they will be witches' food".

The sheriff studied me for a moment and then ordered his deputies to form a search party. We had to use the people in town since it was so small, not too many lawmen were on duty. While they were trying to rescue the kids, I decided to go and find Gary. I went to the other side of the woods where I thought he might be. As suspected, he was standing by the old ruins on the side of the river.

He was feeding on a small fox while looking around, alert. He was not even feeding on humans, he never did. I approached him slowly, but without success. He turned around and his anger was notable. He screeched so loud, my ears were about to burst.

"Gary, you need to help me! We need to find the witch and stop her before she hurts anyone!" I yelled trying to calm him down.

In a deep, growly voice he replied "You can't stop her, she is too powerful, she will curse this whole place and you will all pay for it!"

I walked closer to him and putting my hands up in surrender I said "We can help you Gary. If she gets ahold of those kids, she will not hesitate in sacrificing them"

"So be it! I was bullied by everyone and I don't care what happens to them, I just want my life back to normal and leave this trash you all call town" he let out a low growl while kneeling down on the ground.

"I just want to live happily. No problems. I want a life, a wife and kids. Someone to love and care for me. And if this is the only way I can do that, then I will follow her orders" I could see the hurt in the beast's eyes. He has been through a lot before he went missing. But we had to save him and we had to make that witch disappear. I had picked up a choker for animals who were hunted and tried to trap him. I just had to wait for the perfect moment. And it finally arrived, as soon as he turned his back on me I jumped on his back and put it up, quickly pulling at the chains.

He got angry and tried to pull me, lifting me up but I was able to pull him back down right away. Adrenaline surged through me and I knocked him down on the ground. He ended up being exhausted and groaned, giving up.

"I just want to help you. Please let me help you. This curse can be lifted if you just stop being stubborn" I mentioned as he looked at me with sad eyes. He nodded and let me bring him back to town, but not before telling him to shift back to his human form. He did as ordered and we walked. I reached the town and I could hear a lot of commotion. The kids that were missing were back. I let out a sigh of relief to see they were able to get them out of that cave. I looked at Gary and gave me a sad smile.

"I promise you we will do anything to lift that curse" I reassured him and he nodded, trusting that I could save him. As we were walking towards the crowd, I could hear a cackle.

"The Witch" Gary mentioned and he didn't waste time to shift back to his Wendigo and break the choker that was holding him. A shadowy figure appeared between the trees and a sudden burst of green light was shot from the trees towards us. Townsfolk were screaming and running away for their lives.

"You thought you could steal my sacrifice, Lucas?" she said, smirking at me. She came out of the trees and walked close to me. I recognized her.

"Marlena" I mentioned. The legendary witch of the woods. It had been decades since she had appeared. How did she lure Gary to those woods?

"Yes, Lucas. I know you remember me. You were just a little boy when you last saw me" she mentioned and I couldn't help but feel rage. I took out my shotgun and she quickly knocked it out with a swift of her hands. She closed the distance and lifted me up by the neck.

"Those kids are mine. And that Wendigo was supposed to help me gather them. I need them or else my powers will fade" her eyes turned into a turquoise color, hypnotizing me. I tried to close mine, but she wouldn't let me. I looked straight at her and I was caught in her eyes. I was frozen solid, not being able to move a single muscle.

She dropped me on the ground and walked by me, ignoring the body on the ground. In the distance, I could see Gary's Wendigo hiding behind the trees.

"Come on sweetheart, it is time to hunt down some fresh blood" she ordered him and he obeyed. He walked slowly by me and his eyes were showing guilt and torture.

"Gary, don't go. Please leave those kids alone" I whispered, begging him. He turned his head and kept walking behind Marlena. My body was in pain, and not being able to move was making it worse. I had to save them. I had to save this town from her dark magic. I took all the strength I could and kept dragging my body forward until I was able to get my whole body in full function.

I jogged towards the center of town and there she was by the fountain, trying to lure the kids back to her. She was chanting a spell to control their minds. The kids were like zombies walking towards her while their parents were trying in vain to stop them.

Mothers crying for their little ones. Fathers holding them back as best as they could. The Wendigo looked at me with knowing eyes and the red glow appeared again. He pointed at one end of the town where a torch was burning high. The legend told of witches being burned in the stake and I would try to bring that legend to reality. I snuck around the crowd of crying and screaming folks grabbed the torch and with the best aim I could get, I tossed it at her, burning her alive and ridding everyone of the curse. Including Gary. She was screaming in pain while we all saw her turn into ashes. The kids were safe and the Wendigo was painfully leaving Gary's body.

"Is that the best you can do, Lucas? Don't think this is over." Marlena screamed. The dark clouds went away and the moon came out, shining the night. I could hear sobs, and Gary was on the floor, beaten and bruised. He was crying of joy for being rid of that nightmare he suffered for years. And the kids were alive and safe.

I put a blanket around Gary's body, covering his nakedness.

"You will be okay. Thank you for helping us save everyone. You are our hero" I calmly told him. The clue of this case could be found in the Witches cabin, deep in the woods, where no one dares to enter. Good luck finding it.

Gray's POV:-

It felt like decades I have spent as a slave to that witch Marlena. Lucas freed me from the stupid curse. That made me wish to be like him. For years I was a puppet, I wanted to be like Lucas. I

wanted to help people like he has helped me. Asking around about his address, I reached a small and old house. I rang the bell but no response, I rang it again, once, twice, thrice. But still nothing. I held the door knob and found the door wasn't locked. "How about to get in and wait for him?" I thought and stepped into his house. I look at his place which was completely destroyed. His weapons and his hunting gadgets were lying on the ground completely destroyed. What caught my eye, were a few red stains on the wall. I went close and read a message in horror that said. "Help..."

CHAPTER 39

"You have found the next letter which will lead you to another person who needs your help. You have to go and find the hunter, Lucas Harrison. Who is under the dark spell of an ancient witch Marlana. She wants to perform the ritual of pure humans. Stop her as soon as possible. I hope you will soon find the next letter.

Dalton."

After reading the third letter, Ethan and Calla were on their way to find out what happened to Lucas. Ethan knew Lucas for years. A hunter, who hunts monsters only, not creatures. Ethan had helped him so many times to hunt down the monsters who were troubling humans or other creatures who wanted to live their lives peacefully. They don't hurt anyone. Ethan stopped his car in front of a small house. He smelled an unknown scent. He pushed Calla back and tiptoed towards the door. He kicked open the door and found a young boy standing in the house. Ethan would have lunged himself over the boy if he hadn't read his mind.

"Who are you? And what are you doing here?" He asked the boy calmly.

Gray's POV:-

It felt like decades I have spent as a slave to that witch Marlana. Lucas freed me from the stupid curse. That made me wish to be like him. For years I was a puppet, I wanted to be like Lucas. I wanted to help people like he has helped me. Asking around about his address, I reached a small and old house. I rang the bell but no response, I rang it again, once, twice, thrice. But still nothing. I held the door knob and found the door wasn't locked. "How about to get in and wait for him?" I thought and stepped into his house. I look at his place which was completely destroyed. His weapons and his hunting gadgets were lying on the ground completely destroyed. What caught my eye, were a few red stains on the wall. I went close and read a message in horror that said. "Help..."

I panicked seeing the blood. I went back towards the door to get someone who would be able to help him. I hadn't thought Lucas would be in trouble. As I reached the door, someone kicked it open. I could see his red glowing eyes and huge figure. He wasn't human. I was sure about it. "But what is he and what is he doing here? Is he the one who is behind Lucas' disappearance?" I thought.

I noticed his face changed its colors. "Who are you? And what are you doing here?" He asked me in a calm tone. I hesitated for a few moments. But I was also worried about Lucas.

"My name is Gary. Who are you?" I asked before spilling the beans over him. I wanted to know who he was.

"I'm Ethan, a friend of Lucas. What are you doing in his house?" He asked me.

"I came here to meet him. He saved my life a few days ago. I came here and found this place fully destroyed." I replied. He nodded his head and sniffed the air. His eyes glowed like stars and he looked at the corner where I had found that message. He knelt down on the ground and touched the dried blood.

"I am here, my friend. I will find you." He said and stood up again.

"Where can I find Marlana? I can still sense her curse on you." He asked me. I gave him a confused look.

"Marlena... where can I find her?" He repeated his question. He looked pissed, so I thought it's better to answer him.

"You can't, she is dead. Lucas killed her." I replied and he shook his head.

"Lucas can not kill Marlana. She is alive and I can smell her all over the place." Ethan replied with a smirk.

"That's impossible. I have seen her turning into the ashes." I said with a shocked look on my face.

"You can't kill an ancient witch who had performed pure blood rituals to get her powers. She is alive but if you don't start talking, Lucas will be dead." He said and I stared at him with wide eyes.

"I can take you to the cave. She used it to hide all the abducted kids there." I replied. He just nodded his head. He stepped out of the house and I followed him behind.

"What happened?" I heard a female voice.

"We need to go. I can feel we don't have a lot of time. Get into the car, you too Gray." He said. We all sat into the car and drove off.

After an hour drive, I told him to stop. We were close to the cave but we couldn't drive there. We all stepped out of the car and started walking. "Here, this is the cave." I pointed my finger at the cave as soon as I saw it.

"Calla, where is your pendent?" He asked the woman. She gave him an annoyed look and pulled out a beautiful pendant. He nodded his head and we walked into the cave.

"That's a favor for me Gray. You came back to me. Now I don't have to waste my time searching for you." I heard that scary voice again. I shivered in fear. I looked at Ethan who nodded his head. We walked further deep into the cave but it was the dead end. Lucas was nowhere to be found. Ethan pulled out a tiny glass bottle from his pocket. He started mumbling some words I didn't understand. Then he threw the bottle on the wall. In a few seconds, the wall faded away. Ethan

grabbed Calla's hand and they walked into the part of the cave Marlana never showed me. I followed them behind. There in the middle of the huge cave, I saw Lucas lying on the ground. I saw a circle and all those kids Lucas had saved before standing in the circle.

Marlena came out and froze into her tracks. She looked at Ethan who was growing in anger. Then she looked at Calla and smiled. Marlana made her way to me with a smile on her face. "You brought me two surprises. I won't kill you. You are a good slave." She said and grabbed Calla by her neck. Calla grabbed her wrist and with an easy swing, she twisted her arm behind her back.

"Not your lucky day bitch. A, I don't have time for your games and B, you can't get me that easily." Calla said with gritted teeth. Marlana started reciting a spell. I recognized it, it was a choking spell. But I was surprised to see that it didn't do anything to Calla.

"She is protected by a fairy. You can't do anything to her." Ethan said with a smirk. Behind him, all the abducted kids were standing. He freed them all while Calla kept Marlana busy. Ethan came closer and before Marlana could make any move, Ethan slashed her throat with his claws. Calla pushed her on the ground.

"Follow me everyone." Calla said. We all came out of the cave.

"What about Lucas?" I asked.

"He is safe. Ethan will get him out." She replied. We walked back towards the spot where we had parked the car. I was looking back to see where Ethan was. But he didn't come out. We reached the car and my mouth dropped on the ground. He was already in the car with Lucas on his back seat.

"I hope you can take them all back to the town." He said as Calla hopped into the car. He started the engine and drove off.

THIRD PERSON POV:-

Lucas opened his eyes and found himself lying on the couch. Ethan smirked and offered him his hand. He sat up on the couch and Ethan patted his back. He saw Calla was looking for something.

"You have to do something, I can't find it." Calla said and Ethan stood up. They looked around together and found a beauty box in the corner. She smiled and picked it up.

"How did you know and what were you looking for? Who is she?" Lucas asked all questions at once.

"She is Calla, my soulmate. She was looking for something that belongs to her." Ethan replied and Lucas gave him a confused look. Calla examined the beauty box and Lucas started laughing hysterically.

"Never in my life I have seen anyone opening this box." He said. Calla pushed the button on the beauty box and it opened. Calla smirked and stuck her tongue out.

"That's because only she can open it. It belongs to her ancestors, who sent us here to save you today." Ethan replied his unasked question with a smirk.

Story credit goes to Kiara Colon. I hope you all like it.

CHAPTER 40

CELIA'S POV:-

Hi! I'm Celia. I'm a student at Oxford University. I study Biology and I'm hoping that I will be a successful professor one day.

I was walking down the street thinking about what my father said. He wanted a picture from me. I was the only one in the house that had a camera.

My hobby was to take photos of every interesting thing I see. He didn't want any random photo though. He wanted a picture of either a werewolf or a vampire.

I laughed so much at what he said. Did he really want that?! I don't believe in such paranormal things but I guess I have to go to the forest and try to search for something that doesn't even exist. I will have to take a photo of something else and make it look like a werewolf or a vampire.

I took my camera out of my backpack and took a deep breath before opening the tall black gates of the forest.

My hands were shivering with fear. I never came to this forest alone before. I walked more inside and looked around. Everything was dark. The more I walked inside, the more my instinct was telling me to dash out of that creepy place.

Suddenly, I heard a loud noise making me scream and turn around.

I saw the gates closed. I remember leaving them open. I didn't have the courage to go there so I just continued walking.

Rustling of leaves could be heard around me. I hugged myself and took some random pictures.

I looked closely at one of the pictures I took and froze in my tracks. There were two silver eyes in the corner of the picture.

I closed my eyes and took several more pictures. I looked at them and felt my heart beat fast. I could see a tall creature standing in the middle of the photo. With every photo, he was getting closer to me. I didn't want to get another photo because I knew he would be right next to me if I did so.

Without thinking twice, my legs started running towards the gates. I heard a sound behind me, indicating that someone or even something was following me.

Tears trickled down my cheeks as I kept on running. I was suddenly tackled down on the ground. I closed my eyes and sobbed slowly.

"Please d-don't hu-hurt me" I begged.

I heard a growl making me open my eyes and look up. Those same hypnotizing eyes were staring right at me.

"What a-are you?" I gulped down.

He stood up and took my hand in his. He carried me further in the forest. My voice disappeared. I couldn't say anything. I wanted to scream for help but there was a deep feeling inside me telling me that I was safe in his arms.

I looked at him and found him staring at me too. With every step he took, I could feel his weird clothes rubbing on my cheek. I don't even know why I was thinking about him as a man not as an animal or a weird creature.

From what I was seeing, he looked like a vampire. A crazy thought struck in my mind. My hands crept up to my neck where my camera was. I took it in my hands and quickly took a picture of his face.

He widened his eyes in surprise and growled at me dangerously.

I pushed him back and ran to wherever my legs were leading me. If anything happened to me, at least I have some evidence in my camera, if he didn't crush it of course.

I screamed as I felt something grab my wrist and bite into my neck. After a few minutes, my vision got blurry and I fell down on the ground.

Strong hands held me and all I remember was seeing a giant wolf running after us before I lost my consciousness.

CHRIS' POV:-

I couldn't believe I'd finally found her. My mate. As I was running with her in my arms, I smelt a new disgusting smell. I turned around and found a rogue wolf.

With one simple move of my hand, he was laying on the ground dead.

I took her to my house and laid her on my bed. I drank some of her blood to keep her unconscious for some time, that's why she was sleeping.

After a few hours, she woke up and looked around. She widened her eyes as she saw me and looked at me with fear in her eyes.

"I'm Chris." I smiled at her.

"Where am I?" She asked, ignoring what I just said.

"This is our house," I answered.

"Our? Are there other people who live here with you?" She asked confusedly.

"No, I meant my and your house." She widened her eyes.

"That's kidnapping!" She yelled.

"I thought you are an adult not a kid to kid-nap you." I teased her as she groaned in annoyance
"What's your name?" I asked in interest.

"Celia" She answered while rolling her eyes. Celia, what an amazing name it was. I could say her name several times without getting bored. "What do you want from me? My parents can give you money or anything you want. Just leave me alone." She said desperately.

"I. Want. You." I pointed at her.

"Why?" She yelled.

"Because you're my mate." I shouted back.

"What do you mean?" She asked.

"I'm a vampire." I said and to my surprise, she didn't look shocked. So I continued "Every vampire has a soulmate. It's rare to have a human mate but here you are." I shrugged.

"How can I know that you're not lying?" She gave me a suspicious look.

I leaned in and touched her cheek "Don't you feel the sparks? I think this is enough proof." She removed my hand and sat back.

"I still don't believe it. You can be using me for all I know". She replied stubbornly

"I guess there's no other way." I muttered as I stood up and grabbed a knife from the drawer.

I could hear her loud heartbeats. Did she really think I was going to hurt her?!

"P-please leave me a-alone. Don't h-hurt m-me please." She cried. Tears were streaming down her cheeks, her lips were shivering and her whole body was shaking.

I placed the knife on my wrist and made a small wound. She hissed in pain and held her own arm.

"See? You felt the pain too." I threw the knife and licked the blood off my hand.

"That's impossible" She said mostly to herself and closed her eyes "Why me?" She added.

"That's because you're special. The blood goddess chose you because you can take so many responsibilities and you're smart. If you weren't, you wouldn't have been my mate. In fact, I would

never like to change it." I could see the corner of her lips rising into a smile but still, she didn't look happy with the news.

"Can't you choose someone else? And what is the blood goddess?" She raised her eyebrows in confusion.

"No, I can't. Our god is the blood goddess and she chose you. I can't change it. Also, if you leave me, I might die and you will be hurt. So what do you say?" I asked while taking a deep breath.

"I don't want this" She looked down with sadness in her eyes.

"Do you want to let me die and get yourself hurt? There's a chance you might die too." I held her hand in comfort and raised her chin to make her look in my eyes.

"I guess I have to say this. Since if I didn't, we both would be hurt and I can't let someone die because of me." She sighed.

"I promise to let you live happily. You will never regret your decision." I hugged her in excitement which made her laugh, it was music to my ears.

"What about my parents?" She rubbed the back of her neck nervously.

"I'm sure they will accept it when they will know that if we don't live together, you will be hurt." She nodded hesitantly.

A few hours passed by quickly. We talked about everything. I told her about my life and she told me about hers.

She was a pretty smart student in her college. I was very proud of her.

"I used to read vampire stories when I was younger but none of them said things like that. They had different characteristics about vampires." She said as we were walking down the stairs.

"What did they talk about?" I asked curiously.

"They said that vampires can't get out when the sun is up because they would die. Also, that vampires are humans' enemies." She answered innocently.

I laughed and said. "That's true. We can't get out in the day but there's a really smart guy who made us a potion to make us stand under the sun with no problem. About humans, you all used to be our enemies but from millennia ago. When Sfumato Da Civi, our old vampire master had a human mate, which was the first time ever, there was peace with the humans and vampires."

"That's awesome," She giggled.

I already showed her the house and we were heading to her house. She didn't want her parents to worry more about her.

"I'm nervous." She whispered as we entered the car.

"Don't worry. Everything will be okay" I smiled and leant in for a kiss.

After pulling away, I saw how red she was and burst into laughter.

"That was m-my fir-first kiss." She said, making me gasp.

"If I was one of your guy friends, I would've taken it for millions of years." I laughed and started driving.

We arrived at her house and we knocked on the door. She kept praying that everything would be okay when suddenly, the door was slammed open.

An old worried woman looked at Celia before hugging her tightly. She looked exactly like her. She must be her mother.

"Who is this man?" She asked.

"I'll tell you when we come in." Celia replied and we entered and a man hugged Celia too.

"Now I get where Celia got her good looks from." I said to her mom with a smile on her face.

"Who are you! Did you do anything to my daughter?!" A man shouted harshly.

Before I got the chance to yell at him, Celia said "Relax, dad."

We all sat down and Celia started telling them everything. She talked smoothly making sure she didn't say a wrong word that can cause a fight.

After finishing, her father was fuming with anger. "You kidnapped my daughter." He pointed at me "How dare you?" He frowned.

"Dad, it's not like you didn't kidnap mom on her wedding day." She said.

At that moment, I was trying my hardest not to laugh. He kidnapped her from her wedding!

"Celia! How many times did I warn you from talking about that in front of strangers." Her mom scolded.

"Chris isn't a stranger." She said. My heart warmed and I looked at her lovingly. "Don't you understand! We will both get hurt if you didn't accept. Do you want me to die only because you're stubborn?" She yelled.

They all fell silent and her sister looked at me before saying "I trust this guy."sl She nodded.

I smiled gratefully at her and looked at her father with a begging look in my eyes. I don't know how Celia managed to change me that much and only in one day! I never begged anyone.

"Is this the only way?" Her mom asked sadly. We both shook our head which made her say, "I agree. Only because you will get hurt." She looked at Celia.

Her father nodded too. She squealed and hugged the three of them happily. Her younger sister opened her arms for me as a sign for me to join them which I happily did.

"I promise you that I will keep her happy." I promised her parents. They smiled at me and we walked away.

"The good thing is that the houses are near to each other." She smiled.

"I know, sweetheart." I hugged her.

2 months later

I was sitting in my office doing some work on my computer when suddenly, I heard a scream before someone barged into the room.

I spun my head up to Celia who was jumping with happiness. "You wouldn't believe it!" She shouted and jumped on me.

"What happened?" I asked her while she was sitting on my lap.

She covered my eyes with her hand and then opened them. I opened my eyes and was met with a small round stick that had the most precious two red lines ever. She was holding a pregnancy test and it was positive!

"You're pregnant!" I shouted "I'm going to be a dad." I held her and yelled with happiness.

"My mom will be so happy. She was nagging at me to see her grandchildren." She smiled.

I held her and walked outside. "We're going to the hospital. I want to be sure." I said.

"But I already did 7 pregnancy tests!" She whined.

I drove to the hospital and the doctor said that indeed, she was pregnant.

I was flying from happiness. I was on cloud nine. My life was completed. I found my mate and we were going to have a baby.

CHAPTER 41

"Well done my kids. You have now found the fourth letter. I want you both to go and meet one of the greatest vampires I have known in my life. Chris, you remember him, Ethan? He will be a father soon but he would lose everything if you wouldn't help him. His rival, Merlin wants to take everything away from him. He will kill his children and his wife. If Chris loses his mate and his family, he would become a devil and you would have to kill him. Save his family. You'll find the next letter if you save Celia and her kids. Good luck.

Dalton."

Celia's pov

Today, Chris and I were so excited to know the gender of our baby. It was one of the happiest moments in our life.

We waited for the doctor anxiously to say something. "Wow! You're not having only one baby, you're having twins. A baby boy and the other is a baby girl." She said happily. She was happy that her Alpha and Luna were having babies.

My eyes teared up and I looked at Chris who had happy tears trickling down his cheeks.

The doctor walked out to give us a moment alone. He hugged me and said, "Thank you for everything!" I smiled and caressed his back.

"Thank you too. You always know how to make me the happiest person in this world." I wiped his tears away with my thumb.

I heard a knock on the door, I opened and found a stranger standing. I smiled. "Do you need anything?" I asked the strange man. He looked down at my baby bump and smirked darkly. I shivered seeing his dark smirk.

"Celia, how many times do I have to tell you, do not open..." Chris came from behind but he didn't complete his sentence.

"Why are you here Merlin?" He asked the stranger.

"You thought I would forget everything you have done. Now it's pay back time." Merlin said and took a step towards me. I tried to move away but I was frozen. Like I couldn't move at all.

"Chris, I can't move." I said as tears started flowing freely from my eyes.

"I didn't do anything to you. You lost your place because of your foolishness. Now stay away from my mate." Chris replied.

"My foolishness or your greediness. You are the most greedy and opportunist person I have ever seen in my life." Merlin replied. Now he was standing right in front of me. He put his hands on my baby bump and I shivered again. I saw his claws and fangs grew bigger.

"Hands off." I heard a woman screamed loudly behind Merlin. Before I could understand what was going on, that woman sliced both of Merlin's hands. He growled loudly because of the pain. She stripped off her coat and covered my baby bump with it. Merlin stood up but before he could do anything, I saw a hand passed through Merlin's chest, ripping his heart out of his chest. I screamed loudly but that woman hugged me. She rubbed my back. The way she hugged me, it made me feel like I have known her for ages.

"Shhh... you are fine. I won't let anything happen to your kiddos." She whispered in my ear.

"Throw him out Ethan, or burn him. It's not good for both babies and their mother." That woman said.

"Wait up Calla, I need to undo the spell Merlin had casted on them, then I will burn him." Ethan replied. He first unfroze me then went to Chris.

"How did you know? I was also shocked seeing him here." Chris asked Ethan.

"Master Dalton left me a letter saying you and your family will be in trouble. That's why we came." Ethan replied as he unfroze Chris.

"We had planned to come before him, but it took us a bit longer to reach." Calla said.

"It's okay, I'm glad you both came in on time or I would have lost my family today." Chris said.

"Thank you so much." I said to Calla with tears rolling down from my eyes.

"Don't thank us. We are just doing what we have to. Now, can I see your house?" She said and stood up. I nodded my head and she started going through things. Chris came close to me with Ethan behind him. Chris sat beside me.

"Are you okay?" He asked me and I nodded my head. He wrapped his arm around me protectively.

"Ethan, meet my mate, Celia. Celia, meet Ethan. He is one of the most loyal friends of mine." Chris introduced us both.

"Who is she?" Chris asked and pointed his finger at Calla.

"She is Calla. She is my mate." Ethan replied. Calla came back with an envelope in her hands. She kissed Ethan then showed him the envelope.

"Found it. Hi, I haven't met you both, but Ethan has told me everything about you." Calla replied.

"Wait, isn't she exactly like Lilly?" Chris asked.

"Who is Lilly?" I asked Chris and Ethan started laughing.

"Lilly was my Master's wife. And yes, she is exactly like her, because Calla is Lilly's great granddaughter." Ethan replied to my question that I hadn't even asked. I looked at Chris and he chuckled.

"Ethan can read minds, don't worry." Chris explained to me and we all started laughing. In a flash Ethan took Merlin's body away. In a few seconds he came back.

"Ready to go back home, Calla?" He asked her and she nodded her head. Calla hugged me.

"Take care of yourself and your kiddos. You are safe now." She said and broke the hug. They both bid their goodbyes. Ethan and Calla went to the car that was parked in front of our house. They both hopped in, waved their hands and drove off.

I was going to deliver our babies after one month. My babies were vampires so the pregnancy was only 4 months.

We waited patiently for this month to pass by. Chris wouldn't leave my side and was very protective of me. He wouldn't let me walk down the stairs alone. He had to help me with everything.

It was the day when I will deliver the babies. The pain was unbearable. They immediately took me to the hospital room. Chris was so nervous that he was stuttering while talking. I kept taking deep breaths as the doctor said.

I saw my sister waving at me from the glass and my parents smiling at me.

"One push more." The doctor shouted. I pushed as strongly as I could. A loud cry was heard. The nurses took the first baby and cleaned her/him before giving him/her to Chris. I looked up and saw the prettiest baby boy I've ever seen.

Axel had Chris' silver eyes and looked exactly like his father. Before I got the chance to hold him in my arms, I screamed out of pain and kept pushing. After a few pushes, another cry was heard and Celine looked straight at me.

I looked down at her feeling as if I was looking at a baby picture of myself. They cleaned her just as they did to Axel and put her in my arms.

I held both of them in my arms. They both were calm before falling asleep in my arms.

"Chris, they're both so adorable" I smiled.

He nodded and gave them to the doctor after holding them for some minutes.

Our families and friends entered and took their turns in holding the babies.

"I finally have a family." Chris said as I laid my head on his shoulder.

"I love you." I smiled.

"I love you too." He kissed my forehead.

A FEW YEARS LATER:-

Celine and Axel ran out of the car and entered their house feeling excited. They had amazing news to tell their parents.

They were the smartest kids in grade 2 and all their teachers approved it. They jogged over to the living room and shouted "We got the highest grades. We're the top in our classes." They squealed in excitement.

Celia and Chris looked at them with a proud look in their eyes. "That's awesome! To reward you, today we're going to the amusement park." Chris said, surprising the twins.

They all screamed in happiness including Celia. She has always loved amusement parks. She was waiting patiently for them to go there.

She was also extremely happy for her sister. Her wedding was going to happen tomorrow. She couldn't believe her younger sister had found her first and last true love. She was over the stars for her. Lilith, her sister met a guy at her work two years ago and from then, they had been going on dates. Finally, he proposed to her.

Celia finished university and was now working as a biology professor in the same college she was in, Oxford University. Chris took the alpha title from his father since he had found his mate and he was leading the pack smoothly. Both of them have decided that when their twins reach 20, he will give them the alpha title.

Lilith and her parents have been living in the pack with Celia from a year ago. Once she is married, she will drag her husband with her. Good thing he didn't freak out when he knew about vampires' existence.

The four of them entered the tall red gates of the park and they looked around happily. Celia glanced at Chris who was already looking at her and whispered "You and our kids are everything I have ever wanted and dreamed of." They hugged each other as the twins hid their eyes playfully, teasing their parents.

It was happily ever after.

THE END

Story credit goes to Loumi KH. I hope you all like it.

CHAPTER 42

NATASHA'S POV:-

My name is Natasha and I am a student. I live in Malaysia. I was always told not to go to graveyards after the dusk. But I was just like the others. I did the opposite of what I was told. About a year ago, me and my friends decided to go to a graveyard. We had heard so many stories about that graveyard. People said that they had heard so many unusual voices from the graveyard. It used to happen after the dusk. It was our spring break. A very few of my friends were still in Malaysia. The others went to their home countries to spend some time with their families. We were 6 friends including me, Sarah, Andy, Mona, Kev and Jonny.

We went to the graveyard. It was all quiet and it scared me. But I showed my friends that I wasn't scared at all. Actually, I had placed a bet against my friends that these stories aren't real. I believe in the other creatures living in our world, I just don't know why I challenged my friends.

We entered the graveyard and looked around. "See, nothing here." I said and shrugged my shoulders.

"We don't know that. It's just the entrance. I have heard we need to find the tree of the dead." Kev said.

"Kev, really? Tree of the dead?" I asked in an annoyed tone.

"Definitely. You are the one who challenged us after all. And you think we will give you 2k dollars without checking it all." Mona replied and Kev nodded his head.

"Okay fine. Let's go and find that dead tree." I replied.

"It's the tree of the dead, not the dead tree." Andy replied.

"Whatever, let's just get over with it." I replied in an annoyed tone and started walking deeper into the graveyard. As I was walking deeper, I felt someone's eyes on me. I turned around to look but there was no one except for me and my friends. I brushed off the thoughts and kept walking.

About an hour later, we all saw a huge tree. It was standing in the middle of the graveyard. It was so huge and broad. It smelled like death. I looked at my friends. They all started taking pictures of the tree. I sat on the ground and was playing with the grass. My friends were out of my sight. I was humming a song.

Suddenly, I felt someone's hand on my back. I turned around to look but no one was there. I shook my head and again started humming the song. My friends came back and I stood up. "Found anything?" I asked with a smirk.

"No, but you have to wait till morning for your money. We need to be sure before we give you the money." Sarah replied and all nodded their heads.

"Okay, let's go then." I said and we turned around. We all started walking towards the gates of the graveyard.

Suddenly, someone pushed me and I fell on the ground. I stood back up and glared at my friends. I brushed off the dust from my clothes by my hands. The way I fell on the ground, I would have wounded my arms and knees, but I was fine. Not a single scratch. I sighed and started walking again.

We entered our house after an hour. We all lived in one house. We all rented the house. I went to my room and stripped off my clothes. I looked into the full size mirror. I found nothing, not a single scratch. I shrugged my shoulders and stepped into my bathroom. I took a long hot shower, brushed my teeth and stepped out of the bathroom. I wore a large sized t-shirt and crawled into my bed. It didn't take me long and I drifted off.

In the middle of the night, I felt something odd. I opened my eyes and found myself naked on the bed. My t-shirt was lying on the ground. Someone had torn it apart. I looked at my body, my bed and my comfort were soaked into my sweat. I got up and turned on the AC. I went to the bathroom, took a quick shower and came back to my room. I was feeling so hot, I didn't wear anything. I laid down on the bed and closed my eyes. After a few minutes I drifted off again.

I woke up again when I felt someone's hand on my body. I looked around and found a very handsome man sitting on my bed. His eyes were hypnotic, I felt like, drowning into his eyes. He crawled upon me and I was just smiling like an idiot. I didn't do anything to stop him. I didn't scream. I didn't crawl off of my bed. I was lying on the bed, waiting for him to make a move. And he did.

He leaned in and captured my lips into a passionate kiss. It felt heavenly. His mouth tasted like fresh and cold river water. Like I was thirsty for decades and finally got some water. His hands were all over my body and I was enjoying it. After that, I didn't know what happened. My mind stopped working. My head was light. I couldn't even feel my body. It was like I was paralyzed. I lost my voice. I felt a sharp pain into my lower abdomen. Even though my whole body was numb, I could still feel that pain. It was like someone had stroked something into my womanhood. The pain was unbearable when it started to move into me. I wanted to scream but I didn't. Tears were flowing freely from my eyes. I wanted him to stop, something wasn't right, but I was just lying

there lifelessly. It kept moving inside me until I couldn't bear the pain anymore. Darkness engulfed me and I fainted.

I woke up in the morning. My whole body was aching. I felt like someone had hit me with a huge truck. I tried to get up. I sat up on the bed. With wide eyes I looked at the bed. It was soaked with red stains all over it. I looked at my hands, they looked pailer. I tried to crawl out of the bed but felt a sharp pain into my womanhood. I screamed loudly and that same man came running into my bedroom. He looked at me with a cheesy smile on his face. He sat beside me and stroked my cheek with his knuckles. "Does it hurt so much? Did I hurt you?" He asked me and sat beside me.

Tears blurred my vision. He wrapped his arms around me protectively. "I can't bear this pain. Please do something." I whispered. I didn't even know his name but it felt like I had known him for ages.

"Don't worry, I'll make the pain go away. I will make you feel better." He told me and I nodded my head. I wasn't able to speak anymore. I knew nothing about him. It felt like I had a nightmare. But I could feel it. I could smell him all over me. I was shaking into fear. He pecked my forehead to make me feel better. But when he saw my bed full of blood stains, he got up and went to the bathroom. He came back after a few minutes and scooped me up into his arms and took me to the bathroom. He had filled the tub with lukewarm water. He made me sit into the bathtub. He started massaging my body and it felt so good. That's all I remember before I fell asleep in the bathtub.

CHAPTER 43

Dear Calla and Ethan,

Now you have to go to Pennsylvania. Where a young girl is troubled by a jinn called Azmar. His boyfriend Kev knows nothing, what is going on with his girlfriend. Azmar isn't a good jinn. He possesses innocent girls. He rapes them and takes them with him. He throws them into hell. This is how he is getting stronger. Before he would take Natasha too, go and kill him. And make sure he is burned with the tree of the dead, so the other dead girls would be free from his hold in hell. He does it for a demon. Once he is dead the demon will be dead too. I hope you will be able to save Natasha.

Dalton.

KEV'S POV:-

It's been a few days since we visited the graveyard. I was noticing my girlfriend Natasha. She was getting angrier by every passing day. I was starting to get worried about her. She wasn't just angry, she was also hungry all the time. I wasn't sure what was wrong with her. My friends also had noticed the same difference in her behavior. My girlfriend was the most romantic person in this world. But I had noticed, she didn't even like my touches. I wasn't even allowed to step into her room anymore.

I had heard her having sex with someone so many times. Whenever I asked her about it, she either brushed it off or denied me. One day, she went out and we all friends decided to talk about her. They all had been keeping eyes on her since I started to get suspicious. I knew something was wrong because my Natasha was never a cheater. "What are you thinking, Kev? We need to do something." Johnny asked me in a worried tone. We all were sitting in the living room.

"I don't know man, I am still working on it. I know nothing, what is going on with her. She doesn't even share anything with me." I replied.

It was almost dusk and Natasha wasn't home. Including me, all my friends were starting to get worried. She wasn't picking up her phone. We heard a loud knock on our door. I stood up and opened the door. I saw a strange man, standing at our door with a woman. "Where is she?" The man asked. I gave them both a confused look.

"He's talking about Natasha." The woman said.

"Okay, who are you and how do you know Natasha?" I asked in an angry tone.

"That's not important now. Saving her life is more important for us than explaining to you, how do we know her." She replied.

"What do you mean by saving her life?" I asked with a horror look on my face.

"Will you tell us where is she? Or you prefer her to be dead like the others?" This time, the strange man asked in an angry tone.

"She isn't home. She went out but didn't come back." I replied.

"Shit, that's not good." He said and they both ran towards the car that was parked in front of our house.

"Wait, I'll come with you." I said.

"You all have to come with us. Get your friends and meet us at the tree of the dead." He said and they drove off. I went back inside and told everyone. They all thought that it would be a trick. But I still convinced them to come with me.

We parked our cars at the gates of the graveyard. I ran into the direction where I remembered I saw the tree of the dead. We reached the tree but the strangers were nowhere to be found. "See, I told you it's nothing." Andy said.

"Are you sure?" I heard a man. We all turned around and found that strange man again.

"Tell me, where is Natasha? What have you done to her?" I asked in an angry tone. He didn't answer us but pointed his finger at the sky. We all looked up and found Natasha hanging in the air. Like somebody had tied her with the tree. We all tried to run and help her but the strange man stopped us.

"My name is Ethan, she is Calla. We are here to help." They finally replied.

"We didn't ask your names. Why did you tie her there?" Andy yelled at them.

"We? We didn't do anything. You all did. You all are responsible for her state." Calla yelled at us all.

"What do you mean? Why would we hurt her?" Sarah replied.

"Ah... brought me so many treats. But I just want her. The innocents are yummy." We all heard a voice. It sounded like a demon talking to us.

"Kev, save me please. I don't wanna die here." I heard Natasha. I looked up. She was crying.

"Leave her alone Azmar. Or you will regret it." Ethan said in an angry tone. We heard someone laughing. We turned around and found a man standing in front of the tree. He was very tall. His eyes were pitch black.

"You must be a fool to interfere in my business. You don't know what I can do to you." That man said to Ethan.

"Let her go Azmar. I will kill you in a less painful way." Ethan threatened him. Azmar gritted his teeth and lunged himself at Ethan. Ethan was trying hard to fight that demon but Azmar was more powerful than Ethan.

"In a minute, she will be sacrificed and you won't be able to do anything." Azmar said. He grabbed Ethan by his neck and choked him. Ethan tried to kick him off but Ethan's kicks did nothing to Azmar.

"Not on my watch." Calla yelled loudly and injected something on Azmar's back. He stood up and towered over Calla. But before he could even touch Calla, Ethan decapitated him. "My blood always works." She added.

"That's how we sacrifice." Ethan said with a smirk. He then handed his sword to Calla. In a flash, he climbed up on the tree and freed Natasha. He scooped her up in his arms and jumped down. As soon as he was in the ground, Calla made a small cut on the palm and let her blood drop on the ground. Then she raised the sword and stabbed it into the tree. The tree started burning. In a few seconds, the tree of the dead turned into ashes.

"It was your fault she got herself into that trouble. You just did it for fun. The night you all were in that graveyard, Azmar had possessed her. I am glad that we were here on time and saved her." Ethan said. We were at our home. Natasha was sleeping in her room. It was like she was sleeping after a long time. She was holding my hand tightly. Calla was searching something in the house. We told her that it ain't our own house but Ethan said, "she knows what she is doing."

"Found it. Ready to go back?" Calla came into Natasha's room with an envelope in her hand.

"Where did you find it?" I asked out of curiosity.

"It was in a lamp that is hanging at the door." She replied and shrugged her shoulders.

"Thank you both. If it wasn't for you, we all would have lost our friend." Sarah thanked them both.

"It's okay. We just did what we were told. Be careful and stay away from the graveyards after dusk." Calla replied with a smile. I nodded my head. They both bid their goodbyes and left.

CHAPTER 44.

THIRD PERSON'S POV:-

Calla opened the fifth letter to read. Ethan was busy with his work. Calla read the letter in horror, Calla looked at Ethan in horror. Ethan came and sat beside her. He snatched the letter from her hands and started reading it.

"Dear Calla and Ethan,

Go and find Sidney. She doesn't know what is happening with her. Her Alpha is in trouble and will soon die if you didn't help him. Go and find them, you'll find the next letter in the Alpha's cabin. They are planning to kill the Alpha Drew to take his place then frame Sidney. I hope you won't be late.

Dalton.

Ethan wrapped the letter and offered his hand to Calla, she took it and Ethan made her stand up. He pulled her out of the house, they both hopped into the car and drove off.

SIDNEY'S POV:-

I was sitting on one of the couches in the room of the Alpha. Alpha was sick and no one knew the reason. The pack doctors were trying their best to find out the reason behind his sickness. But they came up with nothing. I was feeling nervous. Beta Patric had ordered me to be by Alpha's side. But I knew Alpha Drew hated me. Ever since I was born, he had hated me. Just because of the promise he had made to my father, he hadn't kicked me out of the pack. I knew if he opened his eyes he would be mad at me. Of course I cared about my Alpha. He was everything to me.

"Water..." a weak whisper made its way to my ears. I stood up and grabbed the glass of water. I went to the Alpha's bed and knelt down on the ground. I slipped one of my hands under his head and pulled his head up. Then I helped him drink water. He was staring at me. I could see the hatred in his eyes and that broke my heart. I controlled myself and my emotions. As he was done, I stood up again and went back to my seat.

"You must be very happy seeing me like this." He whispered but due to our super senses, I heard him loud and clear. I went back to him and again knelt beside his bed.

"If only you could read my mind, you would know how much it kills me to see you like this." I replied with tears in my eyes.

"Like I don't know you. I know you would be very happy if I would die." He said. I felt a sharp pain in my chest.

"You and I both know, I don't lie." I replied. I adjusted his comforter over his body then went back to my seat. I wanted to run away so I could cry loudly. The man I was in love with, hated me. I was quietly sobbing and wiping my eyes. I didn't want to show that heartless man that I love him.

The door opened with the thud and beta Patrick stepped in. I looked at him, he looked angry. He grabbed fist full of my hair and pulled them aggressively. I yelped in pain. "You thought you could kill our Alpha that easily and we would let you. Was that the reason you have asked us to stay with him?" He yelled at me.

"What? You ordered me to be with him. You ordered me in front of everyone." I replied.

"You dare to lie in front of the Alpha?" He said and pushed me on the floor. Fell on the ground with a loud thud. I hurt my head. But still I stood up to explain myself.

"He is lying Alpha. He is the one who told me to be with you. I know you hate me. Why would I do anything against your will?" I asked while sobbing.

"She was giving you poison Alpha. She wanted you dead." Beta Patric replied.

"I don't think so she is the one who's lying." I heard a familiar voice. I turned to look and found Calla standing at the door frame of Alpha's bedroom. She had a smirk on her face. Beta Patric lunged himself at her. But she didn't move an inch. Before Beta Patric could touch her, Ethan jumped between Calla and Beta Patric. He grabbed Beta Patrick's neck and slammed him on the ground.

"You weren't even born when I learned to fight little rascals like you." Ethan said.

"Alpha Drew, Sidney isn't the one who is poisoning you but your own Beta. He wants to become an Alpha." Ethan said loudly. Calla made her way to Alpha's bed. She injected something in Alpha's neck before we could understand what she was up to.

"What did you inject inside me?" Alpha Drew asked.

"Relax dumb head. I injected something that will save your life." She replied and took a few steps away from the bed. I didn't understand until Alpha Drew started shaking. I tried to help him but Calla stopped me. She grabbed my hand and started walking aimlessly in the Alpha's cabin.

"Where are you taking me Calla? I need to be by my Alpha's side." I pleaded to her. She ignored me and kept walking. She stopped in front of the bar. She let go of my hand and went into the bar. She touched all the bottles in the bar and pulled out a red square bottle. She threw it on the floor and it

shredded into pieces. She knelt down and pulled out a piece of paper. She smiled and stood up again.

"This belongs to me. My grandfather left it here. Now let's go back. Your Alpha will stand up any time." She said and grabbed my hand again. She pulled me back into Alpha's bedroom where everyone was ready to kill Ethan.

"Hold it right there or you all will lose your powers." She yelled loudly. Beta Patrick again lunged himself at Calla but this time, she was saved by Alpha Drew. He slashed Beta Patrick's neck. Beta Patrick fell on the ground and in a few seconds we saw him lying dead on the ground. Alpha Drew roared loudly and a few wolves knelt down on the ground. They were the traitors. They knew everything but betrayed their Alpha. Alpha Drew looked at me, we both growled loudly together and lunged at them. We both killed them all. Ethan carried Calla bridal style and zoomed out of the cabin. I turned to look at Alpha. He pinned me by the wall and captured my lips in a passionate and hungry kiss. I smiled and gave him all of me.

CHAPTER 45

"Dear Calla and Ethan,

You have to go and find the woman named Hazel. She needs your help. You need to take her to Necromancer. There, at the house of Dead, you will find the next two letters. You already know Ethan, where to find the house of the Dead. I hope you will find them and help them. Good luck.

Dalton.

Hazel POV

"So will you tell me again where are we going?", I look at Xander and wonder why I still hang out with him. Whenever we have hung out together, we have been in trouble. But again what's life it not adventures

"Just follow me", he says and takes my hand like I am a five-year-old kid

"You know I could follow you without you holding my hand", I say in a casual tone and Xander leaves my hand.

"It's out of habit. I have to do it with Sam, so he doesn't get lost or doesn't leave me for every pretty girl he sees", I smile thinking about how close they must be.

We are at the bar and it is again packed with the locals. The last time I was here, there was a separate crowd.

"Are you going to tell me now what are we doing here?", I ask for the hundredth time now I guess and Xander still doesn't say a word.

He waves at a guy sitting on our regular table but he isn't one of the regulars. Xander begins moving towards him and I follow him.

Something changes inside me when we are almost close to the table. I could smell something strange coming from the guy but I can't put my finger on it. He smells familiar like I should have known him for ages and yet there is a part inside me who wants to jump and strangle him.

I haven't read about demons who behave like this if I am possessed again.

I am not able to take my eyes off his charismatic look and piercing eyes. I feel a nudge on my arms and look beside me. Xander is having a confused look on his face.

"Don't scare him", he says and chuckles, while the guy sitting in front of us looks deadly serious.

I am still too focused on him when I see another person join us on our table. A blonde girl with pretty green eyes. I feel sorry for her since I can see Sam standing at the bar trying to get her attention.

Ah poor girl, doesn't know what is going to happen to her.

"So, this is Ethan and this is Calla. I met them on witchywhich.com, and I guess they can help us with your problem", Xander looks at me like everything would be crystal clear with his statement. He notices the look of confusion on my face and spells Demon on the table, while Ethan rolls his eyes at us.

"There are werewolves and vampires here too, they can listen to everything", I hit his head immediately leaving him confused again.

"Then why did you ask him to meet us here", I state the obvious and he just shrugs.

"This is kind of urgent for me, so if you both can finish your discussion we have a place to go", Ethan is already getting up from the table leaving me totally perplexed.

He stops in his steps when he sees Sam approaching Calla, as though his seat was vacant.

As soon as Sam puts his hand on Calla, an animalistic growl leaves Ethan's lips, but before he could teach Sam a lesson, Calla turns back and twists Sam's arm.

I am barely able to control my laugh since it is a first for me.

"I am sorry, I am sorry, I might have mistaken you for someone else", Sam is almost at the verge of crying from where I can see and Calla is still twisting his arms when Xander interrupts her.

"He is a friend of mine, please leave him before he cries and embarrasses me with himself."

Calla nods and leaves Sam's hand not before she gives him a scary look.

"It's still time to make new friends", I wink at Xander while getting up myself too and following Ethan out. Xander is up too and comes behind me.

"You", Xander says with a pointy finger, "stay with me. I don't want you to get in any more trouble", it is quite an ironic statement to what we are about to do.

"Where are we going now?" I jog up to keep myself with Ethan and Calla who seem in a real hurry. I don't know why but I feel safer by their side than Xander's. I don't know what is so familiar about him but I want to know soon.

"You will know soon", he sounds like a man with limited words or maybe he is really serious about his job.

"He looks strange", I whisper to Xander but I feel like Ethan heard it too.

In a blink of seconds, I see a sleek black Bugatti pulls up in front of us and sitting at the wheels is Ethan. He looks like he is the master of the car with his black leather jacket and black jeans. His scent is just as mysterious as the car standing in front of us.

I am the first to call a shotgun and sit beside Ethan.

I don't know why but I feel like I am getting daggers from Calla or maybe I am thinking a lot.

I should be scared or a little frightened of what will happen in the next few minutes but I am not. I am again seated with a stranger who owns a beautiful car and if Troy happens to see me now, he would definitely offer me to demons himself.

As we make our way on the deserted road, I see the path leading through thick forest. I look back at Xander who is totally oblivious to the path and is busy on his phone.

I am frozen at my seat when we pass by a direction board

"House of Dead 5 Miles", I look sideways at Ethan and his face doesn't show any sign.

"Uh...Ethan..so House of Dead?", I try to be as calm as I can.

"Yeah, Ethan told me that, the guy we are looking for is the one who commands Demons, he would be there", Xander says casually but I am freaking out. Calla doesn't seem scared too like she has done all this before.

"The one who commands Demons?", my face is full of horror and I can't believe I said yes to come with them.

"Don't worry Hazel, Ethan knows this guy", but I am in the place which is opposite of worry. I don't have time to ask more questions as the car halts and we are in front of an old mansion.

Mansion again...are you kidding me?

I and Xander are the first to hop out followed by Ethan and Calla. I am trying to move as slowly as I can but Xander keeps pushing me ahead.

"I am really going to kill you", I whisper but we all come to a stop when we hear someone chuckle.

The laugh itself is scary in the dark place where we have no idea where it came from.

I close the distance between me and the others and try to stand between them. I feel Xander's arm around me while Ethan looks prepared for something. Calla gives me a knowing nod like she wants to say that it will be fine.

“Let’s see who we got here”, This time I almost scream when I see a pair of glowing green eyes in the dark moving towards us.

I am so angry myself, with Xander for doing this stupid thing which could get us killed or worse.

“We are here for some answers”, Xander says with a lot of confidence in his voice taking a step towards the monster who was standing in front of us.

His eyes glowing, his face looks like it was made with two faces sewed together and his fingernails are almost touching his legs.

They are dirty with a lot of mud in them.

Wow, I have got time to critique a demon standing in front of me.

“I am amazed at your stupidity gentleman”, he moves a little bit closer to me,” But I will answer because of this beautiful girl here” I feel something is wrong but I can’t still put my finger on it.

“What’s the catch?” This time it is Ethan, asking the smart question, unlike my dumb partner.

“I will answer all your questions if you give me this beautiful woman”, he lays his fingernail on my neck and I shiver.

“Not going to happen”, Xander is in front of me in an instant.

“It doesn’t have to get ugly”, Ethan says and I could feel like I see a flicker in his eyes.

Another burst of laughter but it isn’t contagious as we all stand on our spots hearing the sudden change in the surrounding.

“Oh...did I tell you...I will get her anyways” saying this he starts to chant something we are not able to understand. I could feel the land beneath me moving and try to hold on to anything strong near us.

“This is all your fault”, I yell at Xander, but I am stunned when I see Ethan. His eyes have gone red and his teeth are longer than normal ones. Calla, on the other hand, pulls out the sword that is secured at Ethan's back, holding it tightly, like she is ready to fight. They both look prepared for something.

“What is he?”, I say, pointing to Xander and seeing him as surprised as I am.

before he could answer, there is a noise, noise of something being dragged on the floor, or some part of someone. I am too scared to open my eyes when I feel a flesh touching me.

“Again, who is he?”, this time my gaze is at the guy with green eyes.

“Uh...I guess..his name was...”Xander is going to say when I hear Ethan’s voice “Necromancer”

“Yeah the one who rules demon”, I am shocked by how little does Xander knows

“No...he is the one who raises the dead”, all four of us turn around and see hundreds of dead bodies standing alive in front of us.

“Hazel..you take the left...Xander goes right...I and Calla will handle the rest of them.” Ethan says with full confidence in us and I feel a surge of power inside me.

Xander takes out the bow and arrow and hands me a silver knife. I shake my head as something comes over me.

“I can take them”, I can’t believe the words coming out of my mouth but I know that I can.

Ethan charges first in the crowd. His body is emitting such a strong aura that both of us are taken aback. He is strong and knows what he is doing. He bites the neck of the dead people and tears them apart from one by one.

Calla, on the other hand, is slaying them, one after the other without stopping at all. I am encouraged too, seeing her taking the charge.

I follow behind him and jump on my target, I am not as strong as Ethan but to his ten, I am able to take five.

Xander is hitting them with arrows and then pulling their brains out so they can’t stand up anymore.

It doesn’t take us a lot of time to reach the end of the line. Once we turn back we see all of them lying on the ground, the first stage they started.

“You might have taken them down but soon more will come and they won’t stop coming” He is talking to me and Xander while there is a discussion going on between Ethan and Calla. I am not able to make out what they are talking about but Calla is the one who seems to be racking her brain.

He starts to vanish in front of our eyes and the mansion too seems to be collapsing.

“We don’t have a lot of time. We have to find it” Calla is now pulling her hair while Ethan seems to have something on his mind too.

“House of Dead...House of Dead”, it looks like Calla is trying to solve a piece of the puzzle, “This board...it’s the only thing that hasn’t been destroyed ironically to its name...I bet something will be inside it” Calla rushes to the board fallen in front of the house and Ethan follows her.

Ethan picks up the board and with one swift movement, he breaks the board in two halves and there seems to lie two envelopes. She picked it up with a wide smile. They both nodded their heads, they hopped into the car and drove off.

Story credit goes to Niharika Katare. (Serena).

CHAPTER 46

Dear Calla and Ethan.

You have to go to the fea land where you will find a lot of innocent people being used by the fea. They are using them for their benefits. But especially you have to go and find a young girl named as dilana. She is special, and they got her heart, the fea population would be unstoppable. Go find them and kill them all so they no longer hurt innocents. Good luck

Dalton.

I've seen darkness before, the kind that makes our street like an old fashioned photograph, everything a shade of grey. This isn't like that. This is the darkness that robs you of your best sense and replaces it with a paralysing fear. In this darkness I sit, muscles cramped and unable to move. I only know my eyes are still there because I can feel myself blink, still instinctively moisturizing the organs I have no current use for. I can't hear anything either. I guess that should bring my heart rate down below the level of "rabbit in a snare" but it doesn't. By my genes I am a predator, I have the front facing eyes and brain enough to hunt, but I feel like prey in this utter black.

When I was brought here I did not know that I was being brought here, lured like a child with candy to the abandoned camp of a mad psychotic clown. There was a slight sense of magic in the air which would take you to the place where they exactly wanted you to be. Once you stepped in this land you would not know that there is something called free will or independent thinking. You think what they make you think and you see what they want you to see. Once all my senses were absolutely disoriented and I had no control over myself any longer, I started moving again, crawling this time. They told me to come to them and all will be fine, you see!!! I went to them....and then...I don't really remember....

"This one really needed some time to be broken Sister," said Tahira as she smiled at the semi-conscious adolescent male prostrate before them with a vacant look before their eyes.

"Ah!! Is that so? Strong one, is he?" asked the Eldest as she grinned at the boy. This one was supposed to be the one who had come of his own volition in order to find his missing sister. Strange circumstances to be united with one's sibling though, getting trapped yourself. Tahira was still controlling his thoughts when Eldest said, "Queen Mother has said that we need a few more like him, you know Tahira? You can let go of him now..."

"But he will then....," started Tahira but Eldest shut her up in the middle of her sentence with a sharp look at her.

“Of course we know what he will be doing, what he will try to do and we want him to do that...don't you see? We have been showing that our land is the one of the greatest pleasure to all those who are staying here with us but now we need to make things a bit stronger, you see dear,” said the Eldest as the vacant gaze was moving away from the boy's eyes and he was taking in the scene before him, trying to figure out what he should be doing at this point of time.

“Ahhh!! There you are sweetheart,” said Tahira with a soft smile on her face. Well even with a soft smile her face looked a lot more beastly than friendly. The Fae were nothing like humans, nothing remotely humane was inside them or you could not even imagine the viciousness that they were really capable of. They were only a particular fable and no one ever came to see the world as it is after seeing them. They were and have been on this Earth far longer than us. It was a matriarchal race who did not have any males...

“Who are you? Where am I?” asked the boy as he looked at the women standing before him. And strangely he could not move from the position that he was in.

“Ahhh!! You are just exactly where you wanted to be. The one place where your sister is...would you like to see her?” asked the Eldest with a kinder smile which scared the shit out of the boy. Their eyes were absolute green like those of snakes and there was no ounce of warmth in them. They had rows of teeth which were sharp like those of the sharks and noses were long and slightly crooked like that of the beak of a vulture.

The boy could not answer, he was trying to understand what exactly he was seeing before his eyes. His brain was not exactly adapted to see something like this at all. He did not even know or understand what he was seeing because these were supposed to be found in your worst nightmares, not standing alive before you.

“You must be tired, I shall take you to her. You will see that she is so happy here,” said Tahira as she again held up her hand in a slight movement and the boy started crawling again. He was trying very hard to resist but both the Fae smiled.

“You see my dear boy... men in this world are not welcome at all. But since we are so pleasant and we want to be the best hostess to you we always welcome you with open arms, but you can never rise up on your feet in this land. That is the clincher, you see?” said The Eldest as she touched Tahira's hand and the boy fell on the ground absolutely rigid with shock as if electricity had jolted across his body.

“Monsters!!!!” he stuttered as both the women smiled.

“Human beings!!! Insolent and stupid creatures...they have this tendency to label anything as monsters what they don't understand,” said the Eldest as she added, “Tahira, make sure that he is

not given anything at all retains his senses completely. I think I am going to take particular enjoyment with this one.”

And Tahira smiled as the boy crawled into some other corner at the back of the places which were designated for their human Guinea pigs.

“The Mother Queen has said that it has been enough time that we have been playing with the docile stock....and it is good enough for now but later on it might not be so we need a few more of good strong stock like this one,” said the Eldest as Tahira nodded in understanding. She left the Eldest alone with her books and parchments and her research which were going to be used later on and she moved to see what was happening in the production center today.

The Fae world was unseen by men and would remain so but that did not mean that they did not have any connections with the vile creatures. They were the only people who needed drugs to keep themselves happy and also forget all that they wanted to forget. The Fae were the only people who were able to create something so pure like the synthetic endorphins that the humans were so crazy about. It was a synthetic purplish colour crystal which had to be either dissolved or injected into the bloodstream or you would also snort it up through your nose.

The Fae women were powerful creatures who could create this sense of fulfillment and happiness in the state that would be almost permanent. They remained locked virtually in a world where they were the most happy. Some wanted flowers and gardens and meadows and some wanted to kill other people. Strange things made the humans tick, but when they were locked in the virtual world and were the happiest, their bodies produced copious amounts of endorphins which were the reason for their happiness. They were trying to synthesize the dopamine as well, which would produce and emit the feelings of love but that was a much more complicated and difficult task.

These endorphins were extracted from the humans continuously till they were able to produce it. And once they could not any longer they were allowed to shrivel up into husks of what they were and changed into plants in the live greenhouse that the Fae maintained so carefully. Every single human had the positive power of becoming something far more basic and since their evolutionary powers were gone, it was just a matter of time before they changed into plants.

Tahira reached the production centre and smiled at the one who was overseeing the production today.

“How is the stock functioning today?” asked Tahira as she watched the rows of delirious kids in the glass cubicles and then her eyes stopped at one of them where she could see that a strange pair of blue eyes was looking straight in her soul.

"What is the matter with that one?" asked Tahira, and she had a strange sensation course through her body for the first time in decades. And as she tasted the acrid taste in her mouth she could understand that it was fear.

"I don't know Sister. She is producing chemicals alright but that is not endorphin or any other thing that we need. I have made a different section for what is releasing from her body and she is conscious the whole time.

"Do we know her name?" asked Tahira as she stared back at the cold flinty blue gaze.

"Dilana," came the reply.

Tahira smiled wickedly and went to the little girl. She grabbed her hand and pulled her towards the examination room to get her examined. She laid the little girl on the table and tied her with leather ties. The little girl shivered, when she saw sharp instruments and dried blood everywhere. But all she could do was try hard to free herself. She wasn't strong enough to break the ties. Water started flowing from her blue eyes. Tahira picked up a sharp knife and her eyes glowed.

She was about to make a cut on the elbow of the little girl when she froze in mid air. Something stopped her. It wasn't someone. It was magic that she couldn't overcome. A blondy came in front with a mischievous smirk on her face. She untied the little girl and carried her like a baby in her arms. Little girl quickly wrapped her tiny arms around her neck and hid her face in the crock of the woman's neck. The woman snatched the knife from Tahira and stabbed her throat. Gagging loudly, Tahira fell on the ground with blood pooling out of the wound like a shower. Humming a lullaby, the woman carried the little girl out of the room.

Outside, she saw a graveyard of fea. Little girl was now on the ground, holding hands with the blonde woman. She looked at the monster, who was huge with sharp fangs and claws. His pitch black eyes made the little girl shiver in fear. She quickly hugged the woman's leg and shut her eyes tightly. The monster came close and the blonde woman picked her up again and carried the little one in her arms. "Don't be afraid sweetie. He is a savior, not a killer." Said the blonde woman with a cheeky smile.

"Are they all dead Ethan?" Asked the blonde woman to the monster.

" Yes Calla, and all the hostages are now free except for her brother who is waiting for her." Said the monster. Calla nodded her head and kissed the little girl's cheek.

"What's your name sweetie?" She asked in a honey sweet voice.

"Dilana," said the little one. Ethan took the little one to her brother while Calla searched for what she was looking for. After a few minutes of walking aimlessly, she finally stopped in front of a huge room. She pulled out the glass tube from her pocket. She opened the door and stepped inside. She

found a hideous creature sitting by the end of the room on a throne. Without hesitation, Calla walked further into the room. She stopped in front of the shelf where she saw a beautiful crown, locked into the shelf. Calla swung her leg and kicked the glass hard. The shelf broke down and Calla picked up the crown. She smiled and in a second, she turned around and threw the glass tube on the queen. Burning into an invisible fire, queen fea died crying crazily. Calla threw the crown on the floor and it shattered into pieces. She knelt down and pulled out two envelopes. Putting them in her pocket, she went back to Ethan who was done with freeing the hostages. Scoping her up in his arms, he carried her bridal style and took her away from fea land. Standing on a safer distance, he started reciting a spell and snapped his fingers twice. Everything started burning. The fea land turned into ashes and the couple went back where they came from.

The story credit goes to Shreya Chakraborty.

Chapter 47

Dear Calla and Ethan,

Go and find the Adam Hurler of the Blue Moon Pack. Anica is abducted by some rogues. An enchantress knows the powers she possesses. If you wouldn't help her the enchantress will kill her and take her blood to kill fairies. Free Anica and you will find the next letter in the bag of the enchantress. Kill her then take the letter and burn their bodies.

Good luck.

ADAM'S POV:-

I came back home after a long time. It had been so long since I had met my parents. I was the youngest child of my parents. That's why my parents loved me more than they had loved the other siblings of mine. My siblings were jealous of me. That's why I decided to stay away. I am Beta of the Blue Moon Pack. The Alpha trusts me more than his life. I had to beg my Alpha every time I visited my parents. I knew they just couldn't live without me.

I entered the house, it was quite around. I haven't witnessed it quite ever in my life. I didn't talk to anyone. I went straight to my parents room. I knocked at the door and waited for my mother to invite me in. But my mother didn't reply. I used my super hearing sense. I heard her sobbing quietly and my father was cooing her. I opened the door and both snapped their heads towards me.

They both stood up as they saw me. They came to me and hugged me. I hugged them back. I had missed them both. But because of my responsibilities as a Beta, I couldn't live with them. "Thank God you are here Adam. I didn't know what to do in a situation like this" My mother whispered softly.

"What do you mean, mother? Is everything okay?" I asked worriedly. I knew something was wrong. It was written all over their faces.

"Someone abducted our Annie. No one is doing anything to bring her back home. Please do something." My mother said and my heart sank in the pit of my stomach.

"How did that happen?" I asked.

"Skylar again took her shopping to carry her bags. She came back alone. I asked her about Annie and she carelessly told me that someone abducted her on their way back home. I am so worried Adam." She replied and started crying again.

"Don't worry mother. I will find her." I replied and exited their room. Anica and Skylar are sisters. Daughters of my older brother. But they both weren't treated equally. A year ago, there was an accident. Anica saved about fifty lives but into that accident, she got her face scarred hideously. But that's not all. Skylar was born with the silver spoon in her mouth. She was born with the wolf that was expected as the future Alpha of the Blue Moon Pack, as an enchantress had told her parents.

They were told that Skylar will be the future Luna. So everyone treated her like a princess while Anica was treated like a slave. She didn't even have her separate bedroom. I gave her my room. That poor kid is just punished for something good she had done.

I knew it was useless to ask anything to that little brat Skylar. So I decided to go and asked the driver who had taken the girls shopping. I went to the driver who was playing cards with the other drivers. Seeing me, they all stood up and bowed their heads. After all the Beta is most respected after the Alpha and his Luna. "Who had taken Anica?" I asked in an angry tone.

"Forgive me Beta Adam, but I haven't seen him. It happened when I wasn't around." He replied. I gritted my teeth over his irresponsibility. He and all the other drivers were ordered to keep the girls safe. But he had failed.

"Weren't you ordered to keep them safe?" I asked angrily.

"I was only ordered to keep Luna Skylar safe, not that hideous creature." He replied with a disgusted face. I would have ripped his throat out and he knew that as well. Because in the next second he was licking my shoes and was begging for forgiveness.

"If I see a single scratch on her body, you will be locked with the dogs for ten days. And more than one scratch will multiply your punishment." I said and walked towards the gates of the mansion. As I reached the gates, a very familiar scent hit my nostrils. I frowned and sniffed the air. I smiled when it was confirmed that it was him. It was Ethan.

"So you caught me again, kid." He said and I went to him. I hugged him.

"I need something that belongs to Anica." He said and my eyes widened. I quickly recovered from the shock because I knew he could read minds.

"That's not because I can read minds, but because Master Dalton had sent me to save Anica. We have to hurry." He said and I nodded my head. I quickly went back to my room and grabbed the bunny I had gifted her on her 7th birthday. She always kept it close to her chest. It is the only toy she had. Because she never showed it to anyone. Or Skylar always takes her toys away.

I gave the pink bunny to Ethan. He started reciting a spell. In a minute, the bunny started floating in the air. We both hopped into his car. That's when I noticed, he wasn't alone. He came with a very stunning blonde woman. The bunny started moving and Ethan started following it.

In a few minutes he parked the car in front of an abandoned warehouse. We all hopped out of the car and followed the bunny. I could hear her cries and her begs. She was begging someone to leave her alone and not to do whatever they were doing. As we entered the hall I saw that poor child into a cage. The rogues were pulling her hair to trim them with their claws. I and Ethan ran to save her but got trapped. An enchantress came, grinning mischievously. She must have cast a spell to bained us. She started laughing hysterically while that poor kid was crying.

I suddenly looked at the blonde woman. The spell didn't work on her at all. She ran towards the rogues and before the enchantress could understand what happened, she decapitated both rogues in just one easy swing of her sword. I looked at Ethan who had a proud grin plastered on his face. He signalled me to look down. I looked down and found the boundaries were burning. "Her blood can undo any spell she wants to undo." He answered my question and grinned. I lunged myself at the rogues who were about to attack Anica and the blonde woman. While Ethan grabbed the enchantress by her throat. He ripped her throat out with his claws while I killed each of the rogues who dared to hurt my little princess.

The blonde woman freed Anica and carried her in her arms. She cooed Anica and Anica stopped crying. Anica looked at me and opened her arms for me to carry her. I smiled and carried her. She went to the dead enchantress and tore her bag. She found two envelopes in that. She put it inside of her pocket.

"Who is she?" I asked.

"She is my soulmate, Calla Davis." He replied. We all exited the warehouse. I grabbed Annie's bunny and gave it to her. We all went to Ethan's car. We all hopped into the car. Ethan recited a spell and snapped his fingers twice. In a few minutes, the warehouse started burning and Ethan drove away. He dropped us back to my parents mansion. I stepped out of the car with Annie sleeping peacefully in my arms.

"You two have a future." He said but before I could say anything, he drove away.

If you want to read the story of Adam Hurler, comment below. It's just a part, the whole story is still ahead.

CHAPTER 48

Dear Calla and Ethan,

You remember Ethan, when I told you the story of twin ghost brothers. They are here and they want to kill an innocent girl. You have to go to the warehouse where children used to paint. Where I got mine and Lilly's picture painted. Go and help the girl and kill them both. You will find the next letters in the warehouse.

Good luck.

Warren Bay was lying on the grass his eyes closed when he heard steps of someone coming towards

him. He can listen to the person's steps to stop near him. Warren opened his eyes to see Wayne standing there looking at the sky. "Brother. I see you don't want me to trouble anyone!!! But why can't you just put the shield off. I want to kill the old bastard who thinks he can insult anyone." Wayne said with an annoyed expression on his face. you can see the hate in his eyes.

Warren put his hand on his green eyes not to see his twin brother standing near him with an annoyed expression.

"Brother, stop being so mean to everyone outside there. We have some rules to follow!!! I don't want

you to get yourself in any trouble. Just wait for a few days and we will rule this world. I just have to find the girl. After killing her we have all the power we lost but not for now keep calm and hidden." he said with a serious expression on his face.

" Brother. this is so boring!!! I can not tolerate living in a human body more. it's disgusting. It's been

years. I can't wait to go back home. It was also a lot of fun when we had all the power. I can not wait to find the girl with a fire mark on her shoulder." Wayne said his eyes color changed in white then came to normal ash grey. They both were alike. just a difference of their eye color. Warren with green eyes and Wayne with ash grey. The twin brothers were famous for their rude and arrogant behavior. They didn't talk to anyone nor go to any parties. Their life was a secret to so many people...

(In Town Library)

Sophia was consumed in a book. Her eyes scanning the pages of the book being a physiology student she has to struggle so much. Sophia has a vast vision but she never dropped studying because the knowledge was so much important to her. She settled her glasses on her nose. Her black-green eyes roaming on the letters when she felt a little sting on her left shoulder. Her birthmark started burning. The mark of fire that started glowing sometimes. Sophia hissed when it felt like sting.

She moved up from her seat grabbing her belongings from the table. She roamed out of the library to get inside the girl's restroom.

She walks hastily towards the restroom. "OH why it itches that much!!!" Sophia thought she moved inside the restroom and came near the wall mirror. She shoved the shirt away from her shoulder to see her mark glowing red like fire. It stung painfully. She got an ointment out of her bag then rubbed it on her shoulder. It relieved the pain a bit but it never felt that pain before. "Why is it hurting that much?"

Sophia made her composure back; she looked at herself in the mirror with big black-green eyes, beautiful plump lips, honey color skin, straight long hairs. She wore glasses due to her weak eyesight but it suits her personality. Her perfect curvy body with all the lines perfectly sculpted on the perfect places. She was a beauty with some hotness but Sophia was very annoyed with her birthmark. One time in an event in the university astrologers told her that she came into the world for a reason. she will not live long. He told her that she is bound with some supernatural active paranormal thing.

Sophia ignored his shit because she doesn't believe in anything like this. She laughed hard!!! "There is nothing like supernatural things." She said then moved out from the hall but she felt his stare on her back for a long time...

Sophia felt a bit relieved when she moved out of the restroom when she ran into a man very hard. She sat on the floor when her shoulder started burning very badly. The man looked towards her with a concerned look. "Hey. I am sorry!!! Does it hurt?" He also sat near her on the floor. Sophia clutching her shoulder hissed in pain.

"Yes. It hurt very badly. " Sophia said. Warren's eyes moved on the face of the girl." She is beautiful." He thought but then his eyes moved on her shoulder. Sophia moved the cloth from the skin to find some relief because it felt like someone ignited a fire!!! Warren's eyes scanned the place to find the glowing red mark of fire on her shoulder. He was surprised but then a smirk came upon his face.

"Oh!!! I think you are hurt. Come on, let me take you to the doctor." Warren said. Sophia looked at the man.

He was very dashing with a green eye and a very sculptured jaw. He looked concerned. Sophia shook her head then got up from the floor. Warren starts walking towards the exit. She was behind him hissing with pain. The pain was just increasing by every passing minute. Her eyes filled with water bearing the pain.

Warren took out his mobile to text Wayne. He wanted to inform him about the good news.

"I found that girl brother!!! I am so happy. I am bringing that girl to our old place. Be there on time. Today we will be free from this malice. We will take our revenge from humans in their world then we get back to our home."

He texted Wayne a wicked smile appeared on his face. When he listened to the girl sizzle in pain. It was his power that was awakening the fire on her shoulder. She had the fate to free the ghosts from human bodies. Wayne was searching for her for a long time... Wayne and Warren both know that she was in this town. That's why they moved here but they were struggling to find her. But it's her fate so today she runs out to him. Now she is here to give him all his power back...

CHAPTER 49

Warren Bay was taking her to his brother. He asked Sophia to sit in the car but she didn't as her eyes were watching an old man that was standing in the sun. He was struggling to sell flowers but no one paid attention to him. The man was so old that he looked in bad condition. Sophia's heart hurt at the sight. She was suffering from so much pain, but she had to help the old man. Sophia asked Warren Bay to wait for her!!! She then ran towards a store. She got inside then bought a bottle of water and some bread. She came out of the store. Warren Bay was watching the girl carefully. What was she doing?

Sophia then ran towards the man first she took her jacket off giving it to him. Then she gave him the water bottle and bread. Sophia asked the man the price of flowers. She bought all of them giving the man a handful of money.

The man smiled at her. Then caressed her head. She then came back to him. Warren's eyes widen looking at the pure soul.

The ghost was surprised by the actions of the girl. She is so pure with a soft heart. How can they kill her? Also, he felt a feeling inside him. The bloom of a flower!!! Sophia smiled at him. Warren smiled back to her.

Warren motioned her to sit inside the car. She sat inside the car. He drove off from the library. In all the route he was watching her. Her beautiful eyes, her face, her lips.

Sophia touched her mark a few times as it was burning so badly. His attention was all on her... Sophia didn't notice that they came to a very sacred place. Warren stopped the car in front of the warehouse.

Wayne Bay was waiting at the door. He smirked while looking at his brother. The girl, he could feel her mark. They both will be free from these bodies soon... He would get his power back soon. Sophia's eyes widened when she looked at the place. She looked at Warren who was standing outside the car. A fear ran down her spine. It was not a hospital!!! Where was she? Where did he bring her?

Warren came to her side then opened the door for her to come outside. She shook her head in a 'No' manner.

"Where are we? Why did you bring me here? I will not come out." She said her throat was dry.

"Come out. I will tell you everything. just came out right now." he said. his eyes changed color to white.

Sophia got scared of his aura as she saw his eyes changing color but she didn't get out. She struggled to close the door. At that the other man came toward them. Her eyes widened looking at Wayne Bay, his twin.

Wayne grabbed her from the hand and pulled her out of the car roughly.

"Girls stop struggling!!! Now you can not go away from here. It will be your dead body soon..." Wayne said laughing loudly.

Warren felt bad when he touched her so roughly. He looked at his brother who was dragging Sophia with him inside. Sophia was struggling, she started crying and shouting for help but Wayne didn't listen to her cries.

Warren ran behind them inside the warehouse. He saw Wayne was dragging her to the chair. He clutched her hairs then slapped her on the cheek. Sophia was still struggling. Tears ran down her cheeks, as a bruise formed under her lip when he slapped her. Warren then ran towards Wayne to stop him. He clutched his arm. Wayne looked at him with a fire in his eyes.

"What are you doing brother? Why are you stopping me? She deserves this for hiding from us." He shouted at him. Warren looked him in the eyes with the same intensity.

"Don't do this with her. She doesn't know anything about us!!! We can not torture her. It is a bad brother!!!" He shouted at him. Sophia was watching them, her hand was in Wayne's hand.

"Brother. you are fighting with me for this disgusting creature. Don't forget who we are? Why do we need her?" He said to him.

"I am not forgetting anything. Just stop behaving like this with her. She is such a pure soul she doesn't deserve it all." He said when looking at his brother with a doubt.

"So you started to have feelings for her? Isn't it? I can feel it!!! Brother. Are you attracted to a mere human? How can you be with a girl that is just our server. We can be free from here right now. I am killing her!!!" He said. Then he grabbed Sophia from her neck.

He was applying pressure on her neck when Wayne threw a punch at his face. He loosen his grip on Sophia's neck. She fell on the ground then started coughing badly to the choke on her windpipe.

Warren threw another punch at his brother's face. Wayne was on his knees due to the strength of the punch. Warren grabbed Sophia from her arm then looked her in the eyes.

"Run from here!!! Run as fast as you can. The car is outside, go away right now. " He ordered her.

Sophia had to save her life. She nodded her head then ran towards the door. Wayne got up on his feet, he was about to follow her but Warren kicked him. They both started fighting and Sophia ran away from them. She ran towards the car, ignited the engine but it didn't work.

She hopped out of the car and was about to run away when a truck stopped in front of her. A tall and muscular man with a hot blonde woman stepped out of the car. The woman went to her and hugged her while the man ran into the warehouse. "I am Calla, that was Ethan. We are here to help you." The woman said and grabbed her hand. She pulled her back into the warehouse where Ethan had pinned the twins on the ground.

"Stop, he saved my life. Please don't hurt him." Sophia said and pointed her finger at Warren. Ethan let go of him but kept Wayne on the ground. He pulled a knife out of his pocket and started reciting a spell. He stabbed the knife into Wayne's heart by the end of the spell. Wayne gasped loudly, grayish clouds escaped the body and vanished into the sky.

Ethan injected the cure into Sophia while Calla searched for the letter. She found it under a painting that was lying on the floor. Pulling out two envelopes, she went back to Ethan. He nodded to Warren then took Calla back to the car.

Warren cupped the back of Sofia's head and crashed his lips on hers. He kissed her passionately and she kissed him back with equal passion.

The story credit goes to javyriah umer.

CHAPTER 50

Dear Calla and Ethan,

You need to find Aurelie. An incubus is trying hard to possess her. But if he gets to her then there is no way stopping him. He wants to get an incredible power that he only can get by the girl. Save the girl and kill him. Take Agatha with you, you'll need her. You'll find the letters into his clinic.

Good luck.

AURELIE'S POV

The dark clouds have covered the mountain top; the birds are flying away from the forest. The animals are crying in pain as the hunters have hunt down the demons lurking in the shadows. The demons protected the woods in the dark from the heartless humans living in the haunted place, called city. Little Aurelie is running away from the fire in the woods to inform his people about the danger coming in their way, but before she could reach her home, a hand comes out from the dark shadow and drags little Aurelie in the world of darkness.

After that nightmare, I wake up drenched in my bed. The sweat on my body is like I have been thrown away in the ocean and brought out from it.

I gasp for air as I feel my air pipe blocked, I pant heavily to catch breath. I throw the duvet away and check the time. "3:15 A.M." As I expected, I have had this nightmare at the same time, every day since I was a little girl.

I've never been to the woods before and I don't understand why I always dream about this particular dream. Despite of having a troubled sleep, I need to take sedatives to make me doze off every single night, even if they stopped working.

I take a shower and complete my daily chores, and run to meet my psychiatrist, Dr. Lucas Smith. His therapies are effective for me but I stopped the session when I felt enough but today, I have fixed an appointment with him so I can explain to him my dreams in detail.

I knock on the door and he permits me to enter, "Ah! Aurelie, how are you? it's been a while since you had your therapy." Lucas asks.

"Hello, Dr. Smith! I think the last time I visited your clinic was 6 months ago, maybe more." I say.

"so, is everything okay? You are looking dull." The doctor asks.

"I am not good. When the nightmare stopped, I thought I don't need the therapies again but I am having these bad dreams again. Why is that happening?" I ask curiously.

“Well, bad dreams, or dreaming the same dream repeatedly happens mostly in cases where the person was abused or scared from an incident in his early life, but your case is complicated. You said you have never been in woods or the woods scare you. it would be related to your past life.” The doctor explains.

“I don’t believe in past life or afterlife. I want you to start my therapy sessions as soon as you can.” I state.

“okay! We will start from tomorrow, 9 A.M.” the doctor says.

I noted down my schedule for tomorrow and left the clinic. As the doctor said about past life, it got me wrapped in weird thoughts. I am not a non-believer but I believe the facts more than the myths.

I was deeply lost in the thoughts that I bumped into someone, a girl. She apologized, “I am sorry.” She puts her hand on my shoulder.

“you don’t have to say sorry, it was my fault.” I state.

The girl turned to me and asked, “Are you okay? You look tense?”

I wonder how she noticed that. I can conceal my expression but somehow this girl seems to be familiar, “do we know each other? Like we have met before?” I ask while scrunching my brows. I notice the girl who is pretty but hideous somehow.

“I don’t think so but I can feel something is wrong with you.” she says and my mouth remains open for a while.

“Can you explain?” I request her.

“I don’t know exactly what you want me to explain to you because there are plenty of things going on with you.”

“Who are you?” I ask her.

“I am Calla Davis! Follow me, I know someone who can help you!” the girl says with confidence. I have no option but to follow her.

She is a stranger or maybe she is tricking me but still my heart wants to believe her. She takes me to a café where the crowd is less, surprisingly. Calla gestures to me to get inside a private room with her. The lights are off and it is complete darkness.

“You will be fine, trust me!” she says and I follow.

My eyes adjust in the darkness and I notice two other people present with us in the room. A young man and a woman who is probably in her late seventies, looking at me. It made me uncomfortable but suddenly, the lights turned on and I could see them clearly.

The woman sitting across me looks determinedly at me with a smug smile on her face. I don't like her at first sight. The man sitting beside her is looking dangerously at me like I have taken his property illegally.

"What's the matter, Calla? Why did you invite a stranger here?" Ethan asks furiously.

"she is the one we were looking for. I just bumped into her. She needs our help." Calla defends.

Ethan sighs loudly and gestures to me to take the vacant chair, "what is this? Are you doing some kind of witchcraft?" I stammer when I notice the table.

A pentagon was painted over the round table with a star shaped symbol. The candles were lit on the joints. To be honest, it scared me to the core. I have seen this kind of cultism in movies or T.V. and I don't believe in such dark art practices.

"just relax, we are not going to sacrifice you to the devil. In fact, we are going to find the devil inside you." the woman sitting across me said.

I thought of running away from the room but the door gets locked by itself, "what are you guys doing? I will call the police."

"take my phone and try calling them." The guy's name Ethan jabs.

"Aurelie, that's your name, there is no need of running away. We are here to help you. Please take the seat, or I have different ways to make you behave." The evil lady states.

Reluctantly, I sit down with them and Calla asks me to put my palm on the table, facing up. I did what she said but If any of them try to do something wicked, I swear I will make them pay.

"you are having bad dreams? What kind of dreams?" the lady asks.

I stay silent but Ethan growls which made the hairs on my nape of the neck stand. I reply in a low tone, "I dream about woods. They are on fire and a girl, who is running away from there but someone drags her back. I was 14 when I had such dreams but now I have them every single night." I wake up all sweaty in the bed, like someone poured a bucket full of water over me." I cry.

"Have you ever encountered a weird stranger ever?" the lady asks seriously.

"NO! As long as I remember, I have never met a complete stranger. I have lived here all my life and my mother is my only family. We never go to other places as my mother has no relatives."

"that's strange? I can sense some weird negativity inside you but I can't locate it." The lady states.

“can I leave now? I have a therapy session with my doctor.” I ask hesitatingly.

“that would be great!” Ethan snaps.

I stood from my seat and was about to leave when my locket got unlocked somehow and fell on the wooden floor. I bend to pick it up but before me, Ethan grabs the locket in his hands and observes it carefully.

“who gave this to you?” Ethan asks

“My doctor gave me this, it has amethyst which helps in peaceful sleeping.” I reply.

Ethan crushes the locket under his foot and it reveals that the locket was full of sand instead of a stone. I gasp to see and everyone else stands in shock.

“Amethyst? Is your doctor an astrologist?” Ethan asks angrily.

“he is a psychiatrist! He is giving me therapies to prevent horrible nightmares.” I defend.

“I want to meet your doctor! Something is fishy.” Ethan states.

“what are you saying?” I ask.

The lady approaches me and gives me a small potion bottle, “this is holy water.”

Calla drags me to the out from the room and they ask for the direction of the clinic. I take them to Dr. Smith’s clinic. My heart is drumming arithmetically inside of me and my throat burns in dryness.

“go inside and show him your broken locket. We will be there in a few minutes.” Calla assures me and I build a strength.

I knock on the door and get inside. Dr. Smith was sitting facing his back to me or checking other patients.

“sorry to disturb you doctor but...” As he turned to me, I saw his big sharp conical teeth with blood covering on them. The patient was lying dead on the chair and he was eating the flesh. I scream and run to leave but the Doctor grabs my hair and pulls me inside.

“you are a devil!!” I scream.

His fangs grow longer and he moves his head to bite me off. Suddenly, Ethan breaks the door and shoots the doctor with a weird gun. The doctor is thrown away to the opposite wall. They both indulge in a fight with the devil getting an upper hand.

Calla comes to save me but the devil jumps on her and scratches on her upper arm. Something happens to Calla as she passes out immediately.

Ethan jumps on his back and stabs a shiny knife into his neck, decapitating from his body. The devil dies and his body disintegrates in the air.

Ethan approaches Calla and shakes her but nothing works. I recall that the lady gave me holy water, I brought out the bottle from my pocket and handed it to Ethan.

He removes the dart and pours the holy water over the wound, then licks her wound. The wound over her arm gets healed quickly and Calla regains her consciousness. I sigh in relief.

“thank you guys for saving me and girls like me from the devil.” I smile at them.

“we did what we were sent here for. Don't thank us.” Calla says.

“the devil was an incubus who was holding on you by manipulating your dreams.” Ethan informs

Calla stood up and went through all the drawers. She pulled out two envelopes from one of the drawers. She put it in Ethan's jacket and nodded at me. Ethan and Calla leave the place and destroy the Dr. Smith clinic. I went back to my home and for the first time in my life, I had a peaceful sleep.

(The story credit goes to Ashea Sparks.)

CHAPTER 51

Dear Calla and Ethan,

Now that you have found all the letters, it's time to know how to save Sophie. As you both know that the solar eclipse is near. You have to go to the darkest part of the forest. Near the lake of blood, you will find a circle of the seven pine trees. Take that mirror I had gifted to Lilly. You have to place the mirror right in the middle of the circle. The mirror should face the sun. Then you have to write "aftah" on the mirror with Calla's blood. You'll get a door to the Riders world. You have to do that as the sun will start to get eclipsed. And you have to come out before the sun is fully eclipsed. If you stayed there until the sun was fully eclipsed then you would be stuck in that world forever. I know it's impossible to defeat the Storm Riders but there is always a way. Find that way.

Good luck.

Calla and Ethan read all the letters together and found the hidden message from Dalton. Ethan grabbed all the weapons he could find in his house. Ashley also came with his vampires. Alpha Drew also decided to help them in return for saving his life. Sidney also came with Alpha Drew to help her friend to find her niece. Beta Adam was with them as well. A few more packs joined them who were trying to find their missing pack members.

Once everything and everyone was ready, they hopped into their cars and started their journey towards the darkest part of the forest. Nobody dared to go there. Ethan parked his truck and hopped out. Once every one arrived, they all walked towards the lake of blood. "Why is it called the lake of blood?" Calla asked in confusion.

"About a thousand years ago, a pack of wolves ruled this part of the forest. They were all murdered by that lake. Since then, the lake is red and this part is still haunted by the ghosts of the dead wolves. That's why people started to call it the lake of blood. No one comes here and whoever came here, never went back." He replied.

"Then what about us all?" She asked.

"We are all protected by the pendant you are wearing. It will protect us from the pack so we can finish our job and go back home." He replied. She nodded her head and kept following Ethan. After an hour and a half, they reached the lake of blood. Quickly they found the circle of the seven pine trees. They all went there together. Ethan placed the mirror in the middle of the circle facing the sun, as Dalton had instructed.

He then made a small cut on Calla's palm and wrote "aftah" on the mirror. In a few seconds the doors to the Riders world opened. They all stepped into the Riders world. The Riders were

nowhere to be found. They ran inside and started freeing the hostages. Calla and Ethan went to find Sophie.

Ethan heard a giggle. He grabbed Calla's hand and pulled her into that direction. There, they saw a beautiful garden. Sophie was playing hide and seek with someone. Calla gasped when she saw her dead sister standing in the middle of the garden, trying to find the little Sophie. A tear escaped Calla's eye when she looked at her niece. Her smile made her heart warm with all the emotions. Calla ran towards the garden but hit a wall and fell back. She looked up and found a thick glass wall.

"Sophie..." Calla screamed loudly. Sophie turned around and found her aunt standing. She just waved her hand and hid again.

"Sophie, come on baby. We have to get out of here." Calla yelled loudly. Sophie shook her head.

"I don't want to, aunt Cal. I want to stay here with mommy and Dada." She replied.

"They aren't your mommy and Dada. They are just an illusion. You have to come with us. Let's go home baby." Calla said and Sophie again shook her head.

"No! I want to stay with mommy." Sophie yelled at Calla. Calla knew they were running out of time.

"Please Sophie. We don't have much time. Come with me. I can't live without you." Calla pleaded between her sobs.

"My mommy is here. So I will stay here." Sophie said and started stepping away.

"No Sophie, please come back. Please..." Calla said and started sobbing hard but Sophie didn't stop. She grabbed the hand of the woman who looked like Mara. She was walking away when she heard someone that made her feet froze in the middle of the way.

"When the night falls I,

And the birds go to sleep.

Princess Sophie is awake,

What does she need?

Does she want a big horse,

Or a shining castle.

Does she want to look pretty,

Or is just being naughty.

Oh the moon want to know,
The sun is already snoring.
And the stars twinkle to ask too,
but only her daddy is knowing.
She wants a hug,
And a goodnight kiss.
I will rock her to and fro now,
And thus she will sleep."

Sophie heard the lullaby and turned around to face the couple. She remembered that lullaby. She had heard that before. She looked at Calla, then Ethan who was smiling widely at the sweet little girl. He knelt on the ground and opened his arms wide for the little girl. She smiled seeing Ethan. She snatched her hand back from the woman and ran towards Ethan. She jumped out of the garden and wrapped her tiny arms around Ethan's neck. He wrapped his arms around her as well and stood up. Calla also wrapped her arms around both of them and they shared their family hug.

Ethan grabbed Calla's hand and pulled her out of the Riders world. Everyone was waiting for them to come out. Ethan and Calla came out with Sophie in Ethan's arms. Once everyone was out, they turned around and left. but as they came out, they were already surrounded by the Riders.

All the creatures lunged themselves at the Riders. But even though they were thrice in number against the Riders, still the Riders were winning. Most of the creatures were lying on the ground unconscious. The leader of the Riders lunged himself at Ethan. Ethan wrapped his arms around Sophie to keep her safe. Calla pulled the sword from Ethan's back. She attacked the leader of the Riders.

With one easy swing of his hand, he slapped Calla and she fell on the ground. Riders encircled Ethan and started beating him mercilessly. The leader of the Riders kicked his stomach and he spat blood on the ground. He was coughing hard. The Riders pulled Sophie away from Ethan and was taking her back. The leader of the Riders took a broken branch of the tree and stabbed Ethan in his chest. "No!!!" Sophie screamed loudly and started punching the Rider that was carrying her back.

Poetry credit goes to Niharika Katane (Serena.)

CHAPTER 52

All the creatures lunged themselves at the Riders. But even though they were thrice in number against the Riders, still the Riders were winning. Most of the creatures were lying on the ground unconscious. The leader of the Riders lunged himself at Ethan. Ethan wrapped his arms around Sophie to keep her safe. Calla pulled the sword from Ethan's back. She attacked the leader of the Riders.

With one easy swing of his hand, he slapped Calla and she fell on the ground. Riders encircled Ethan and started beating him mercilessly. The leader of the Riders kicked his stomach and he spat blood on the ground. He was coughing hard. The Riders pulled Sophie away from Ethan and was taking her back. The leader of the Riders took a broken branch of the tree and stabbed Ethan in his chest. "No!!!" Sophie screamed loudly and started punching the Rider that was carrying her back.

Calla opened her eyes and found Dalton sitting beside her. "Wake up my dear. It's no good time to sleep." He said. Seeing him, she started crying. Because she knew everything was over. Ethan was dying and Riders were taking Sophie back.

"It's all over. I lost everything again." She said between her sobs.

"I won't agree with you. You still stand a chance against the situation here." Dalton replied

"Look at them, it's over." She yelled but Dalton just chuckled.

"Didn't I tell you before, it's impossible to defeat the Storm Riders but there is always a way. Find that way." He said.

"How? Tell me and I will do it." She asked.

"I can't tell you that. You have to figure that part out." He replied.

"I don't know anything." She yelled at him again.

"Tell me one thing my dear, will you let them take away your family? Will you let them destroy your happily ever after? Will you let them take your niece away from you? Will you let them kill Ethan? Will you let them?" He asked her.

"No, I will not." She replied.

"Didn't I tell you that you are more powerful than any of us?" He asked and she nodded her head.

"Then get up Calla and fight for whatever means the world to you. Get up and fight. They can't take anything away from you. You can take it all back." He said and Calla balled her fists.

Beta Adam and Alpha Drew lunged themselves at the Rider who was carrying Sophie. They succeed to free Sophie from his hold. Sidney quickly scooped Sophie into her arms and ran into the direction where they all had parked their cars. The leader of the Riders pulled his sword out and aimed for Ethan's neck. "Nobody can hurt my family. NOT ANYMORE!!!" Ethan heard Calla's Voice. It was different from her usual voice. It was more gruffy and heavy than Calla's voice.

The leader of the Riders turned to look at Calla. Her eyes were glowing in violet color, like two stars. She roared loudly at him. She puts her palm on the blade of the sword and slides it upwards. The sword's blade became red with her blood. She swung the sword and before the leader could understand what was happening, she decapitated his head. The head of the leader fell on the ground. Calla put her foot on his head and roared loudly again.

All the Riders looked at the head of their leader under her foot. A horrific look appeared on their faces. They all exchange looks then bowed their heads in front of Calla. Wind started blowing like a storm was about to come. With a strike of the lighting, all the Storm Riders disappeared.

Calla ran towards Ethan. She cut her wrist and held it close to his mouth. As the scent of berries hit his nostrils, his eyes turned pitch black. He held her wrist tightly and started drinking her blood. Gulp after gulp, he drank from her wrist. Once his wounds were fully healed, he let go of her wrist and pulled her close to him. Before she could react, he captured her lips in a long and hungry kiss.

He bit her lower lip and she moaned. He slipped his tongue into her mouth and devoured her mouth. He let go of her when she was out of breath. Breathing heavily, she stared into his eyes. Suddenly, her head spun as she felt dizzy. She shut her eyes and darkness engulfed her.

Calla opened her eyes and found herself laying on a familiar bed. She looked around and recognized the room. She was in Ashley's castle. The door opened and Ashley walked into the room. He sat at the edge of the bed and held her hand. "How are you feeling, my child?" He asked.

"I'm better. My head hurts but I'm better. What happened to me?" She asked.

"Congratulations, you are pregnant." He replied with a proud grin on his face.

"What? I thought he was a vampire, we couldn't have any babies." She asked

"True, but he is a hybrid and a born vampire, so you can have his child. You are pregnant with his child." He replied. Her cheeks turned pink and she narrowed her eyes. Ashley chuckled and stood up to leave.

"Grandpa, don't you think it's your time to live your life as well. We all deserve a second chance. You deserve it as well." She asked with a smile.

"I know, my child. I promise I will live my happily ever after as well. As I am not cursed anymore. Thanks to you." He replied with a grateful smile. She nodded her head and he walked out of the room. She patted her tummy lovingly, knowing that there was a life growing inside her and smiled widely.

The door opened again and Sophie came running into the room. She opened the closet and hid inside it. "Where are you, my little baby vampy?" Ethan asked as he stepped into the room. Calla smiled at the pet name he had given to Sophie. Sophie giggled and Ethan grinned mischievously. He opened the closet door and scooped her up in his arms. He swung Sophie in the air then tickled her tummy. She giggled and hugged him tightly.

He took her to bed and sat beside Calla with Sophie in his lap. "Come on Sophie, let's go. I'll show you the garden with strawberries." Andrew came and said. Sophie jumped off of Ethan's lap and ran towards Andrew excitedly.

"Be careful Andrew. I will break your neck if I see a single scratch on her." Ethan threatened him and he just bowed his head. Calla giggled seeing his care towards Sophie. He reminded her of Xavier. He used to care for her exactly the same.

"Thank you so much." He whispered in her ear and buried his face in the crook of her neck. He inhaled her sweet berries scent deeply.

"For what?" She asked.

"For being into my life. For trusting me. For giving me a family." He replied. He pulled her onto his lap and wrapped his arms around her protectively.

"What happened to me in the forest?" She asked.

"It was your child. It gave you power to save your family. Our child is, I don't know, it's something else. Something we haven't seen or heard of. Our child is very special." He replied proudly and patted her tummy lovingly.

"I love you." She said and rested her head on his chest.

"I love you too." He replied and kissed the top of her head.

EIGHT YEARS LATER:-

"Come on, Athena. I am tired now." Sophie cried and sat on the couch.

"You lost again Sophie." The baby replied and jumped into Sophie's lap. Sophie kissed her cheek and wrapped her arms around her tightly.

"You are so cute, my little bundle of joy." She said to the baby.

"I love you too Sophie." The little girl replied.

"Sophie, Athena, come downstairs. Daddy is home." They both heard Calla. Sophie picked the little Athena into her arms and went downstairs. Sophie made the baby sit on the couch and ran towards Ethan. Ethan just opened the door and Sophie jumped on him. Hugging him tightly.

"You're back daddy." She squealed in happiness.

"Of course my little baby vampy. How are you?" He asked and carried her into the house like a baby.

"I am good. I just missed you so much." She said and Ethan chuckled.

"I have missed you too." He replied.

"I've missed you too, Daddy." Little Athena squealed in happiness. He picked her as well and took them both to the living room. He pecked the cheeks of his both daughters and they pecked him back.

"Come on now. Let him breath, girls." Calla said.

"Okay aunt Cal." Both girls said. Sophie picked her cousin in her arms and took her back to her bedroom. Calla went to Ethan and sat into his lap. She leaned closer to his ear and licked his earlobe.

"I have missed you too, Mr Carter." She whispered in a low seductive voice. She heard him growling into his chest. In a blink of an eye, they were into their bedroom, laying naked on their bed. He kissed her deeply and pushed his shaft inside her. She moaned loudly as he started pumping himself in and out. They made love to each other while their daughters were playing with each other.

THE END